Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2009 with funding from
Boston Library Consortium Member Libraries

http://www.archive.org/details/voyagesofdiscove02wils

AN

ACCOUNT

OF A

VOYAGE ROUND THE WORLD,

Chiefly undertaken

TO OBSERVE THE TRANSIT OF VENUS OVER THE SUN'S DISK,

IN THE YEARS

1768, 1769, 1770, AND 1771,

BY LIEUTENANT JAMES COOK,

Commander of his Majesty's Bark the *Endeavour*.

A VOYAGE, &c.

CHAP. I.

Purpose of the Voyage—Omai leaves England with regret—Separation of the Vessels—The Resolution anchors at Teneriffe—Proceeds on her Voyage—Their danger near Bonavista—Arrive at the Cape of Good Hope—Junction of the Discovery—Prince Edward's Islands—Kerguelen's Land—Take in Water at Christmas Harbour—Description of Cape Cumberland, &c. Port Palliser—Cape George—Passage to Van Dieman's Land—Effects of a Squall—Arrival in Adventure Bay—Course to New Zealand—Adventures and Observations.

THE practicability of a northern passage to the Pacific Ocean being still an object of enquiry, Captain Cook was supplied with every necessary for this grand undertaking. As all former navigators round the globe had returned by the Cape of Good Hope, the arduous task of attempting the same thing by reaching the high northern latitudes between Asia and America was now assigned our hero; and this plan, it seems, was adopted in consequence of his own suggestion. His instructions were to proceed to the Pacific Ocean through that cluster of islands he had before visited, within the

southern tropic, and thence, if practicable, to make his way into the Atlantic.

Accordingly, on February the 10th, 1776, Captain Cook went on board his Majesty's sloop the Resolution, and hoisted his pendant, having received a commission to command her the preceding day. The Discovery, of three hundred tons, was, at the same time, prepared for the service, and Captain Clerke appointed to the command of her. This gentleman had been Captain Cook's second lieutenant on board the Resolution, in his second voyage round the world. The Resolution was hauled into the river on the 9th of March to complete her rigging, and take in stores and provisions for the voyage. Both ships, indeed, were abundantly supplied with every thing requisite for a voyage of such duration. The officers and men on board the Resolution (including marines) were one hundred and twelve, and those on board the Discovery were eighty.

To convey some permanent benefit to the inhabitants of Otaheite, and of the other islands which they might happen to visit, his Majesty commanded some useful animals to be taken out. On the 10th they took on board a bull, two cows, with their calves, and some sheep; with hay and corn for their support. They were also furnished with a sufficient quantity of valuable European garden-seeds, which might add fresh supplies of food to the vegetable productions of the newly-discovered islands. Both ships, by order of the Board of Admiralty, were amply supplied with an extensive assortment of iron tools and trinkets, to facilitate a friendly commerce and intercourse with the inhabitants of such new countries as they might discover. With respect to their own wants, nothing was refused them

that might be conducive to health, comfort, or convenience.

It being their intention to touch at Otaheite and the Society Islands, it had been determined to carry Omai, (who had been brought to England by Captain Furneaux,) back to his native country: accordingly Captain Cook and he set out from London early on the 24th of June, reached Chatham between ten and eleven o'clock, and were from thence conveyed in a yacht to Sheerness, where the Captain's boat was waiting to take them on board the Resolution. It appears Omai left London with some degree of regret, when he reflected upon the favours and indulgences he had received; yet, when mention was made of his own islands, his eyes sparkled with joy. He entertained the highest ideas of this country and its inhabitants; but the pleasing prospect of returning home, loaded with what would be deemed invaluable treasures there, and of obtaining a distinguished superiority among his countrymen, operated so far as to suppress every uneasy sensation; and when he got on board the ship, he appeared to be quite happy.

Being delayed by contrary winds, they did not clear the channel till July the 14th. They saw Teneriffe on the 31st, at four in the afternoon; and at day-light on the first of August they sailed round the east point of that island, and anchored on the south side, in the road of Santa Cruz, about eight o'clock, in twenty-three fathoms water. There were, riding in this road, a French frigate, two French brigantines, an English brigantine, and fourteen sail of Spanish ships.

They now received a visit from the master of the port, who asked the ship's name. Upon his retiring, Captain Cook sent an officer on shore to present his respects to

the governor, and ask his permission to take in water, and to purchase such articles as were thought necessary. The governor very politely complied with Captain Cook's request, and sent an officer on board to compliment him on his arrival. In the afternoon Captain Cook waited upon him, accompanied by some of his officers; and, before he returned to his ship, bespoke some corn and straw, ordered a quantity of wine, and made an agreement for a supply of water.

The race of inhabitants found here when the Spaniards discovered the Canaries, are no longer a distinct people, having intermarried with the Spanish settlers; their descendants, however, may be known from their being remarkably tall, strong, and large-boned. The men are tawny, and the women are pale. The inhabitants, in general, of Teneriffe, are decent, grave, and civil; retaining that solemn cast which distinguishes those of their country from others.

Having got water and other articles on board, they weighed anchor on the 4th, and proceeded on their voyage.

On the 10th, at nine o'clock in the evening, they saw the island of Bonavista bearing south, distant about a league, though they then thought themselves much farther off; but it soon appeared that they were mistaken; for, after hauling to the eastward, to clear the sunken rocks that lie near the south-east point of the island, they found themselves close upon them, and barely weathered the breakers. Their situation was, for some minutes, so very alarming, that Captain Cook did not choose to sound, as that might have increased the danger without any possibility of lessening it.

Having cleared the rocks, they steered between Bo-

navista and the island of Mayo, intending to look into Port Praya for the Discovery, as Captain Cook had told Captain Clerke that he should touch there. On the 12th, at six o'clock in the morning, the isle of Mayo bore S. S. E. distant four or five leagues. They sounded, and found ground at sixty fathoms. At the distance of three or four miles from this island they saw not the least appearance of vegetation: nothing presented itself to view, but that lifeless brown, so common in unwooded countries under the torrid zone.

On the 13th they arrived before Port Praya, in the island of St. Jago, where two Dutch East India ships, and a small brigantine, were at anchor. The Discovery not being there, they did not go in, but stood to the southward.

They lost the north-east trade wind the day after they left the Cape de Verd Islands; and, on the 30th, got that which blows from the south-east. The wind, during this interval, was principally in the south-west quarter. It generally blew a gentle breeze, but sometimes fresh, and in squalls. They had few calms, and those of short duration. Between the latitude of 12°, and of 7° N. the weather was very gloomy, and frequently rainy; insomuch, that they were enabled to save as much water as filled the greatest part of their empty casks.

The necessary precautions to purify the air between decks, with fires and smoke, and to oblige the people to change their cloaths at every opportunity, were strictly observed on board the Resolution and Discovery; and they enjoyed the advantage of it, having fewer sick than on either of Captain Cook's former voyages. The Resolution, however, was very leaky in all

her upper works. The sultry weather had opened her seams so wide, that the rain water passed through as it fell. The officers in the gun-rooms were driven from their cabins, by the water that came through the sides, and hardly a man could lie dry in his bed. The caulkers were employed to repair these defects, as soon as they got into fair settled weather; but Captain Cook would not trust them over the sides while they were at sea.

On the 1st of September they crossed the equator, in the longitude of 27° 38′ W. and passed the afternoon in performing the old ceremony of ducking those who had not crossed the equator before. On the 8th they were a little to the southward of Cape St. Augustine. They proceeded on their voyage, without any remarkable occurrence, till the 6th of October. Being then in the latitude of 35° 16′ S. longitude 7° 45′ W. they alternately met with light airs and calms, for three successive days. For some days before they had seen albatrosses and pintadoes, and they then saw three penguins. In consequence of this they sounded, but found no ground with a line of one hundred and fifty fathoms. They shot a few birds, one of which was a black petrel, about the size of a crow. In the evening of the 8th, a bird, which the sailors call a noddy, settled on their rigging, and was taken. It was larger than a common English blackbird, and nearly of the same colour, except the upper part of the head, which was white. It was web-footed, had black legs, and a long black bill.

A fresh gale from the north-west succeeded this calm weather, which continued two days. Afterwards they had variable light airs for about twenty-four hours, when the north-west wind returned, and blew fresh.

On the 17th they saw the Cape of Good Hope, and the next day anchored in Table Bay, in four fathoms water.

After receiving the usual visit from the master-attendant and the surgeon, Captain Cook sent an officer to Baron Plettenberg, the governor, and saluted the garrison with thirteen guns, and was complimented, in return, with the same number. Two French East India ships were in the bay, the one outward, and the other homeward bound.

Captain Cook now went on shore, accompanied by some of his officers, and waited on the governor, the lieutenant-governor, the fiscal, and the commander of the troops. These gentlemen received him with the greatest civility; and the governor, in particular, voluntarily promised him every assistance that the place afforded. Before Captain Cook returned on board, he ordered fresh meat, greens, &c. to be provided every day for the ship's company.

On the 22d they fixed their tents and observatory, the next day they began to observe equal altitudes of the sun, in order to discover whether the watch had altered its rate. The caulkers were set to work to caulk the ship; and Captain Cook had concerted measures for supplying both ships with such provisions as were wanted; and as the several articles for the Resolution were got ready, they were immediately conveyed on board.

On the 31st of October it blew excessively hard at south-east, and continued for three days. The Resolution was the only ship in the bay that rode out the gale without dragging her anchors: the storm ceased on the 3d of November. On the 10th, in the morning, the Discovery arrived in the bay. She sailed from Plymouth

on the 1st of August, and would have been with her consort a week sooner, had not the late gale of wind blown her off the coast. Captain Clerke, on his passage from England, lost one of his marines, by falling overboard. No other accident happened among his people, and they arrived in perfect health. The next day, the Discovery wanting caulking, Captain Cook sent all his workmen on board her, and lent every other assistance to the captain to expedite his supply of provisions and water.

While the ships were repairing for the prosecution of their voyage, Mr. Anderson, and five others set out on the 16th, in a waggon, to take a view of the country. They crossed the large plain to the eastward of the town, which is entirely a white sand, resembling that which is commonly found on beaches. At five in the afternoon they passed a large farm-house, some corn fields, and vineyards, situated beyond the plain, where the soil appeared worth cultivating. At seven they arrived at Stellenbosh, a colony, in point of importance, next to that of the Cape.

The village stands at the foot of the range of lofty mountains, about twenty miles to the eastward of Cape Town, and consists of about thirty houses, which are neat and clean: a rivulet, and the shelter of some large oaks, planted at its first settling, form a rural prospect in this desert country. There are some thriving vineyards and orchards about the place, which seem to indicate an excellent soil, though perhaps much may be owing to the uncommon serenity of the air.

At this season of the year, Mr. Anderson could find but few plants in flower, and insects were very scarce. He and his companions left Stellenbosh the next morn-

View of the Town of Fonchal, the Capital of the Island of Madeira.

ing, and soon arrived at the house they had passed on the 16th; Mr. Cloeder, the owner of which, having sent them an invitation to visit him, they were entertained by this gentlemen with great politeness and hospitality. They were received with a band of music, which continued playing while they were at dinner; which, in that situation, might be reckoned elegant. In the afternoon they crossed the country, and passed some large plantations. In the evening they arrived at a farm-house, which is said to be the first in the cultivated track called the Pearl. Here they had a view of Drakenstein, the third colony of this country, which contains several little farms, or plantations. Plants and insects were as scarce here as at Stellenbosh, but there was a greater plenty of shrubs, or small trees, naturally produced, than they had before seen in the country.

On the 19th, in the afternoon, they went to see a remarkable large stone, called by the inhabitants the Tower of Babylon, or the Pearl Diamond. It stands upon the top of some low hills, and is of an oblong shape, rounded on the top, and lying nearly south and north. The east and west sides are nearly perpendicular. The south end is not equally steep, but its greatest height is there; whence it declines gently to the north part, by which they ascended, and had a very extensive prospect of the whole country. The circumference of this stone is about half a mile, as they were half an hour walking round it, including allowances for stopping and a bad road. Its height seems equal to the dome of St. Paul's church. Except some few fissures, it is one uninterrupted mass of stone.

On the 20th, in the morning, they set out from the Pearl, and, going a different road, passed through an

uncultivated country to the Tyger Hills, where they beheld some tolerable corn-fields. About noon they stopped in a valley for refreshment, where they were plagued with a vast number of musquitoes; and, in the evening, arrived at the Cape Town.

Both ships being supplied with provisions and water sufficient for two years and upwards, and every other necessary article, they weighed and put to sea December 1, with a light breeze at south, but did not get clear of land till the 3d.

On the 5th a squall of wind carried away the mizen top-mast of the Resolution, but they had another to replace it. On the 6th, being then in the latitude of 39° 14′ S. and in the longitude of 23° 56′ E. they observed several spots of a reddish hue. Upon examining some of this water that was taken up, they perceived a number of small animals, which the microscope discovered to resemble cray-fish. They continued to the south-east, followed by a mountainous sea, which occasioned the ship to roll exceedingly, and rendered their cattle troublesome. Several goats, especially the males, died, and some sheep.

On the 12th they discovered land, extending from S. E. by S. to S. E. by E. They at length discovered it to be two islands: that which lies most to the south appeared to be about fifteen leagues in circuit; and the most northerly one about nine leagues in circuit. They passed at equal distance from both islands, and could not discover either tree or shrub on either of them. They seemed to have a rocky shore, and, excepting the south-east parts, a ridge of barren mountains, whose sides and summits were covered with snow. These two islands were called Prince Edward's Islands, and four

others more to the east named Marion's and Crozet's Islands. After leaving Prince Edward's Islands, they shaped their course to pass to the southward of the four others. Captain Cook had received instructions to examine this island, and endeavour to discover a good harbour.

On the 16th they saw numbers of penguins and divers, and rock-weed floating in the sea; and on the 21st a very large seal. The weather was now very foggy, and as they hourly expected to fall in with the land, their navigation was both dangerous and tedious. The fog clearing away a little on the 24th, they saw land, bearing S. S. E. which they afterwards found to be an island of considerable height, and about three leagues in circuit. They soon discovered another of equal magnitude, about one league to the eastward; and, between these two, some smaller ones. In the direction of S. by E. another high island was seen. They did but just weather the island last mentioned: it was a high round rock, named Bligh's Cap. Its latitude 48° 29′ S. and longitude 68° 40′. The weather beginning to clear up about eleven, they tacked and steered in for the land. At three o'clock they passed it, with a fresh gale at west. Presently after they clearly saw the land, and at four o'clock it extended from south-east to south-west by south, distant about four miles. The left extreme, (which Captain Cook judged to be the northern point of this land) terminated in a high perpendicular rock; and the right one in a high indented point. Towards the middle of the land there appeared to be an inlet; but, on approaching it, they saw it was only a bending on the coast.

Having got off the Cape, they observed the coast to the southward much indented by points and bays, and, therefore, fully expected to find a good harbour. They soon discovered one, into which they began to ply; but it presently fell calm, and they anchored in forty-five fathom water; the Discovery also anchored there soon after. Mr. Bligh, the master, was ordered to sound the harbour, who reported it to be safe and commodious.

Early on the 25th, they weighed, and having wrought into the harbour, anchored in eight fathom water. The Discovery got in at two o'clock in the afternoon; when Captain Clerk said that he had with difficulty escaped being driven on the south point of the harbour, his anchor having started before he could shorten in the cable. They were, therefore, obliged to set sail, and drag the anchor after them, till they had room to heave it up, when they perceived that one of its palms was broken off.

Immediately after they had anchored, Captain Cook ordered all the boats to be hoisted out, and the empty water-casks to be got ready. In the mean time he landed, to search for a convenient spot where they might be filled, and to observe what the place afforded. He found vast quantities of penguins and other birds, and seals, on the shore. The latter were not numerous, but so insensible of fear, that they killed as many as they chose, and made use of their fat and blubber to make oil for their lamps, and other purposes. Fresh water was exceedingly plentiful; but not a single tree or shrub was to be discovered, and but little herbage of any kind. Before the captain returned to his ship, he ascended a

ridge of rocks, rising one above another, expecting by that means to obtain a view of the country; but before he had reached the top, so thick a fog came on that it was with difficulty he could find his way down again.

The people having laboured hard for two successive days, and nearly completed their water, Captain Cook allowed them the 27th of December as a day of rest to celebrate Christmas. In consequence of which, many of them went on shore, and made excursions into the country, which they found desolate and barren in the extreme.

In the afternoon, Captain Cook, accompanied by Mr. King, his second lieutenant, went upon Cape Francois, expecting, from this elevation, to have had a view of the sea-coast, and the islands lying off it. But they found every distant object below them hid in a thick fog. The land even with them, or of a greater height, was visible enough, and appeared exceedingly naked and desolate, except some hills to the southward, which were covered with snow.

On the 29th they sailed out of Christmas Harbour, steering south-east along the coast, with a fine breeze and clear weather. They were off a promontory, which Captain Cook called Cape Cumberland, about seven or eight o'clock. It lies about a league and a half from the south point of Christmas Harbour; between them is a good bay. Off Cape Cumberland is a small island, on the summit of which is a rock, resembling a sentry-box, which name was given to the island on that account. A group of small islands and rocks lies two miles farther to the eastward: they sailed between these and Sentry-box island, the breadth of the channel being full a mile.

After passing through this channel, they saw a bay on the south side of Cape Cumberland, running in three leagues to the westward: it is formed by Cape Cumberland to the north, and by a promontory to the south. Captain Cook named this promontory Point Pringle, and the bottom of this bay was called Cumberland Bay. The coast is formed into a fifth bay, to the southward of Point Pringle. In this bay, which obtained the name of White Bay, are several lesser bays or coves, which appeared to be sheltered from all winds. Off the south point several rocks raise their heads above water, and probably there are many others that do not.

The land which first opened off Cape Francois, in the direction of S. 53° E. they had kept on their larboard bow, thinking it was an island, and that they should discover a passage between that and the main; but they found it to be a peninsula, joined to the rest of the coast by a low isthmus. The bay, formed by this peninsula, Captain Cook named Repulse Bay. The northern point of the peninsula was named Howe's Foreland, in honour of Lord Howe. Drawing near it they observed some rocks and breakers not far from the northwest part, and two islands to the eastward of it, which at first appeared as one. They steered between them and the foreland, and were in the middle of the channel by twelve o'clock. The land of this foreland or peninsula is of a tolerable height, and of a hilly and rocky substance. The coast is low, and almost covered with sea-birds.

Having cleared the rocks and islands, they perceived the whole sea before them to be chequered with large beds of rock-weed, which was fast to the bottom. There is often found a great depth of water upon such shoals,

and rocks have, as often, raised their heads almost to the surface of the water. It is always dangerous to sail over them, especially when there is no surge of the sea to discover the danger. They endeavoured to avoid the rocks, by steering through the winding channels by which they were separated. Though the lead was continually going, they never struck ground with a line of sixty fathoms: this increased the danger, as they could not anchor, however urgent the necessity might be. At length they discovered a lurking rock in the middle of one of these beds of weeds, and even with the surface of the sea.

They were now about eight miles to the southward of Howe's Foreland, across the mouth of a large bay, wherein are several rocks, low islands, and beds of sea-weed; but there appeared to be winding channels between them. They were so much embarrassed with these shoals, that they hauled off to the eastward, in hopes of extricating themselves from their difficulties; but this plunged them into greater, and they found it absolutely necessary to secure the ships, if possible, before night, especially as the weather was hazy, and a fog was apprehended.

Seeing some inlets to the south-west, Captain Cook ordered Captain Clerke (the Discovery drawing less water than the Resolution) to lead in for the shore, which was immediately attempted: after running over the edges of several shoals, on which was found from ten to twenty fathoms water, Captain Clerke made the signal for having discovered an harbour, in which they anchored in fifteen fathoms water.

Captain Cook now ordered two boats to be hoisted out, in one of which he dispatched Mr. Bligh, the mas-

ter, to survey the upper part of the harbour, and look out for wood. He also desired Captain Clerke to send his master to sound the channel south of the small isles, and went himself, in his other boat, accompanied by Mr. Gore and Mr. Bailey, and landed on the north point, to see what discovery could be made from thence.

From an hill over the point they had a view of the sea-coast, as far as Howe's Foreland. Several small islands, rocks, and breakers, were scattered along the coast, and there appeared no better channel to get out of the harbour than that by which they had entered it. While Captain Cook and Mr. Bailey were making these observations, Mr. Gore encompassed the hill, and joined them at the place where the boat was attending for them. There was nothing to obstruct their walk except some craggy precipices; the country being, if possible, more barren and desolate than that about Christmas Harbour. There was neither food nor covering for cattle of any sort, and, if any had been left they must inevitably have perished. In the little cove where their boat was waiting for them (which Captain Cook called Penguin Cove, from the immense numbers of those birds appearing there) is a fine river of fresh water, which they could approach without difficulty. Some large seals, shags, and a few ducks, were seen here; and Mr. Bailey had a glance of a very small land-bird, but it flew among the rocks, and they lost it.

At nine o'clock they got on board, and Mr. Bligh returned soon after. He reported that he had been four miles up the harbour; that its direction was W. S. W.; that its breadth near the ships did not exceed a mile; that the soundings were from thirty-seven to ten fathoms; and that, having landed on both shores, he found the

land barren and rocky, without a tree or shrub. This harbour was named Port Palliser.

The next morning they weighed anchor, and put out to sea. Having got three or four leagues from the coast, they found a clear sea, and, about nine o'clock, discovered a round hill, like a sugar-loaf, bearing S. E., and a small island to the northward of it, distant about four leagues. Captain Cook named the sugar-loaf hill Mount Campbell; at noon it bore south 47° W.; a low point bore S. E. at the distance of about twenty miles; and they were little more than two leagues from the shore. The land here, in general, is low and level. The mountains end about five leagues from the low point, leaving a great extent of low land, on which Mount Campbell is situated. These mountains seemed to be composed of naked rocks, whose summits were covered with snow; and nothing but sterility was to be seen in the vallies.

At noon they perceived low land opening off the low point just mentioned, in the direction of S. S. E.; it proved to be the eastern extremity of this land, and was named Cape Digby. Between Howe's Foreland and Cape Digby the shore forms one great bay, extending several leagues to the south-west. From Cape Digby the coast trends nearly south-west by south to a low point, to which Captain Cook gave the name of Point Charlotte. In the direction of S. S. W., about six leagues from Cape Digby, is a pretty high projecting point, called the Prince of Wales's Foreland; and six leagues beyond that, in the same direction, is the most southerly point of the whole coast, which was distinguished by the name of Cape George.

Between Point Charlotte and the Prince of Wales's

Foreland they discovered a deep inlet, which was called Royal Sound; and, advancing to the south, they saw another inlet into the Royal Sound, on the S. W. side of the Prince of Wales's Foreland.

On the south-west side of the Royal Sound all the land to Cape George consists of elevated hills, gradually rising from the sea to a considerable height; they were naked and barren, and their summits capped with snow. Not a vestige of a tree or shrub was to be seen. Some of the low land about Cape Digby seemed to be covered with a green turf, but a considerable part of it appeared quite naked. Penguins and other oceanic birds, were numerous on the beaches, and shags innumerable kept flying about the ships.

Captain Cook intending, (pursuant to the instructions he had received) to proceed to New-Zealand to take in wood and water, and provide hay for the cattle, steered E. by N. from Kerguelen's Land. Till the 3d of January, 1777, the weather was tolerably clear, with fresh gales from the W. and S. W.; but now the wind veered to the north, and continued in that quarter eight days; during which, though there was at the same time a thick fog, they ran upwards of three hundred leagues, chiefly in the dark; the sun, indeed, sometimes made its appearance, but very rarely. On the 7th Captain Cook dispatched a boat with orders to Captain Clerke, fixing their rendezvous at Adventure Bay in Van Diemen's Land, if the ships should happen to separate before they arrived there. However, they had the good fortune not to lose company with each other.

On the 19th a sudden squall carried away the Resolution's fore-top-mast and main-top-gallant-mast, which occasioned some delay in fitting another top-mast. The

former was repaired without the loss of any part of it. The wind still remaining at the west point they had clear weather; and, on the 24th, in the morning, they discovered the coast of Van Diemen's Land, bearing north ½ west. Several islands and elevated rocks lie dispersed along the coast, the most southerly of which is the Mewstone. Captain Cook gave the name of Eddystone to a rock that lies about a league to the eastward of Swilly Isle or Rock, on account of its striking resemblance to Eddystone light-house. These two rocks may, even in the night, be seen at a considerable distance, and are the summits of a ledge of rocks under water. On the north-east side of Storm Bay are some creeks that seem tolerably sheltered.

On the 26th, at noon, a breeze sprung up at south-east, which gave Captain Cook an opportunity of executing his design of carrying the ships into Adventure Bay, where they anchored as four o'clock in the afternoon, in twelve fathoms water, about three quarters of a mile from the shore. Captains Cook and Clerke then went, in separate boats, in search of convenient spots for wooding, watering, and making hay. They found plenty of wood and water, but very little grass. The next morning Captain Cook detached two parties, under the conduct of Lieutenant King, to the east side of the bay, to cut wood and grass, some marines attending them as a guard, though none of the natives had yet appeared. He also sent the launch to provide water for the ships; and afterwards paid a visit to the parties thus employed.

In the evening they drew the seine, and caught a great quantity of fish, with which this bay abounds. Every one now came on board with the supplies they

had obtained; but next morning, the wind not being fair for sailing, they were again sent on shore on the same duty; and Mr. Roberts, one of the mates, was dispatched in a boat to examine the bay. They had observed columns of smoke in different parts, from the time of their approaching the coast; but they saw none of the natives till the afternoon of the 28th, when eight men and a boy surprised them with a visit at their wooding-place. They approached the vessel with the greatest confidence, none of them having weapons except one, who had a short stick pointed at one end. They were of a middling stature, and somewhat slender; their hair was black and woolly, and their skin was also black. They were entirely naked, with large punctures or ridges, some in curved, and others in straight lines, on different parts of their bodies. Their lips were not remarkably thick, nor their noses very flat: their features, on the contrary, were not unpleasing, their eyes pretty good, and their teeth tolerably even and regular, though exceedingly dirty. The faces of some of them were painted with a red ointment, and most of them smeared their hair and beards with the same composition. When offered presents, they received them without any apparent satisfaction. They either returned or threw away some bread that was given them, without even tasting it: they likewise refused some elephant fish; but when they were given some birds, they kept them. Two pigs having been brought on shore to be left in the woods, they seized them by the ears, and seemed inclined to carry them off, with an intention, as it was supposed, of killing them.

Captain Cook wishing to know the use of the stick which one of the savages held in his hand, made signs

to them to show him; upon which one of them took aim at a piece of wood placed as a mark, about the distance of twenty yards; but, after several essays, he was still wide of the mark. Omai, to show the great superiority of the English weapons, immediately fired his musket at it, which unexpected noise so alarmed them, that they ran into the woods with uncommon speed; and one of them was so terrified, that he let fall two knives and an axe which he had received as presents. They then went to the place where the crew of the Discovery were watering; but the officer of that party firing a musket in the air, they fled with great precipitation.

Immediately after they had retired, Captain Cook ordered the two pigs, one a male and the other a female, to be carried about a mile within the woods, and he himself saw them left there, taking care that none of the natives should observe what was passing. He also intended to have left a young bull and a cow, besides some goats and sheep; but he soon relinquished that design, being of opinion that the natives would destroy them; which he supposed would be the fate of the pigs, if they should chance to find them out.

They were prevented from sailing on the 29th by a dead calm, which continued the whole day. Captain Cook, therefore, sent parties on shore to cut wood and grass, as usual; and he accompanied the wooding-party himself. Soon after their landing, about twenty of the natives joined them, one of whom was distinguished not only by his deformity, but by the drollery of his gesticulations, and the seeming humour of his speeches, which, however, they could not understand. Those whom they now saw differed in some respects, particularly in the texture of the hair, from the natives of the

more northerly parts of the country, whom our navigator met with in his first voyage. Some of them had a slip of the kangooroo skin round their ancles; and others wore round their necks some small cord, made of fur. They seemed not to value iron, but were apparently pleased with the medals and beads that were given them. They did not even appear to know the use of fish-hooks. Their habitations were small hovels or sheds, built of sticks, and covered with the bark of trees.

Captain Cook, on leaving the wooding-party, went to the grass-cutters, and having seen the boats loaded with hay, returned on board. He had just quitted the shore, when several women and children appeared, and were introduced to Lieutenant King by the men who accompanied them. These females wore a kangooroo skin fastened over their shoulders, the only use of which seemed to be to support their children on their backs. Their bodies were black, and marked with scars like those of the men, from whom, however, they differed, in having their heads shaved; some of them being completely shorn, others only on one side, while the rest of them had the upper part of their heads shaved, leaving a very narrow circle of hair all round. They were far from being handsome; however, some of the gentlemen paid their addresses to them, and made liberal offers, but without effect.

In the afternoon Captain Cook went again on shore, and found the grass-cutters on Penguin Island, where they had met with excellent grass in the greatest abundance. The different parties laboured hard till the evening, and then, having provided a sufficient quantity of what was most wanted, returned on board.

During their continuance in Van Diemen's Land, they had either light airs from the east, or calms: they therefore lost little or no time by touching on this coast. The land is diversified with hills and vallies, and well wooded. The only wind to which Adventure Bay is exposed, is the north-east; and, upon the whole, this may be considered as a very safe road. Its latitude is 43° 21′ 20″ south, and its longitude 147° 29′ east. There is a beautiful sandy beach, about two miles long, at the bottom of Adventure Bay, formed to all appearance by the particles which the sea washes from a fine white sand-stone. This beach is very well adapted for hauling a seine. Behind it is a plain, with a brackish lake, out of which were caught, by angling, some bream and trout. The parts adjoining the bay are mostly hilly, and are an entire forest of tall trees, rendered almost impassable by brakes of fern, shrubs, &c. The soil on the flat land, and on the lower part of the hills, is sandy, or consists of a yellowish earth, and in some parts of a reddish clay; but further up the hills it is of a grey tough cast. This country, upon the whole, bears many marks of being very dry, and the heat appears to be great. No mineral bodies, nor stones of any other kind than the white sand-stone, were observed; nor could they find any vegetables that afforded subsistence for man. The forest-trees are all of one kind, and generally quite straight: they bear clusters of small white flowers. The principal plants were wood-sorrel, milk-wort, cud-weed, bell-flower, gladiolus, samphire, and several kinds of fern. The only quadruped they saw distinctly was a species of opossum, about twice the size of a large rat. The kangooroo, found further northward in New-Holland, may also be supposed to inhabit here, as some

of the inhabitants had pieces of the skin of that animal.

The principal sorts of birds in the woods are brown hawks or eagles, crows, large pigeons, yellowish paroquets, and a species which were called motacilla cyanea, from the beautiful azure colour of its head and neck. On the shore were several gulls, black oyster-catchers, or sea-pies, and plovers of a stone-colour.

They observed in the woods some blackish snakes that were pretty large, and they killed a lizard which was fifteen inches long and six round, beautifully clouded with yellow and black.

Among a variety of fish, they caught some large rays, nurses, leather-jackets, bream, soles, flounders, gurnards, and elephant-fish; besides a sort which they did not recollect to have seen before, and which partakes of the nature both of a round and a flat fish. Upon the rocks are muscles and other shell fish; and upon the beach they found some pretty Medusa's heads. The most troublesome insects were the musquitoes, and a large black ant, whose bite inflicts extreme pain.

The inhabitants seemed mild and cheerful, with little of that wild appearance that savages in general have. They are almost totally devoid of personal activity or genius, and are nearly upon a par with the wretched natives of Terra del Fuego. They display, however, some contrivance in their method of cutting their arms and bodies in lines of different directions, raised above the surface of the skin. Their indifference for presents, their general inattention, and want of curiosity, were very remarkable, and testified no acuteness of understanding. Their complexion is a dull black, which they

sometimes heighten by smutting their bodies, as supposed, from their leaving a mark behind on any clean substance. Their hair is perfectly woolly, and is clotted with grease and red ocre, like that of the Hottentots. Their noses are broad and full, and the lower part of the face projects considerably. Their eyes are of a moderate size, and though they are not very quick or piercing, they give the countenance a frank, cheerful, and pleasing cast. Their teeth are not very white, nor well set, and their mouths are too wide: they wear their beards long, and clotted with paint. They are, upon the whole, well-proportioned, though their belly is rather protuberant. Their favourite attitude is to stand with one side forward, and one hand grasping, across the back, the opposite arm, which, on this occasion, hangs down by the side that projects.

In the morning of January the 30th, they weighed anchor with a light westerly breeze. Soon after they had put to sea, the wind became southerly, and produced a perfect storm; but veering in the evening to the E. and N. E. its fury began to abate. This wind was attended with an almost-intolerable heat, which, however, was of so short a continuance, that some of the crew did not perceive it.

In the night, between the 6th and 7th of February, one of the Discovery's marines fell overboard and was drowned. On the 10th, in the afternoon, they descried the coast of New-Zealand, at the distance of eight or nine leagues. They then steered for Cape Farewell, and afterwards for Stephens's Island; and, in the morning of the 12th, anchored in Ship Cove, Queen Charlotte's Sound. They soon after landed many empty water-casks, and cleared a place for two observatories.

In the mean time several canoes came alongside of the vessels; but very few of those who were in them would venture on board. This shyness appeared the more extraordinary, as Captain Cook was well known to all of them; and as one man in particular among the present groupe, had been treated by him with distinguished kindness during a former voyage. This man, however, could not by any means be prevailed on to come aboard. They could only account for this reserve by supposing, that they were apprehensive of their revenging the death of Captain Furneaux's people,* who had been killed here. But, upon the captain's assuring them of the continuance of his friendship, and that he should not molest them on that account, they soon laid aside all appearance of suspicion and distrust. The next day they pitched two tents, and erected the observatories. Two men were employed in brewing spruce beer; while others filled the water-casks, collected grass for the cattle, and cut wood. Those who remained on board were occupied in repairing the rigging, and performing the necessary duty of the ships. A guard of the marines was appointed for the protection of the different parties on shore, and arms were given to all the workmen to repel all attacks of the natives.

During the course of this day, many families came from various parts of the coast, and erected their huts close to their encampment. The facility with which they build these temporary habitations, is remarkable. They have been seen to erect above twenty of them on a spot of ground, which was covered with plants and shrubs not an hour before. Captain Cook was present

* See Captain Cook's Second Voyage.

when a number of savages landed, and built a village of this kind. They had no sooner leaped from the canoes than they tore up the shrubs and plants from the ground they had fixed upon, or put up some part of the framing of a hut. While the men were thus employed, the women took care of the canoes, secured the provisions and utensils, and gathered dry sticks, to serve as materials for a fire. These huts are sufficiently calculated for affording shelter from the rain and wind. The same tribe or family, however large, generally associate and build together; so that their towns and villages are usually divided by palisades into separate districts.

They were occasionally visited by other natives, besides those who lived close to them. Their articles of traffic were fish, curiosities, and women; the two first of which were speedily disposed of, but the latter did not come to a good market, as the seamen had conceived a dislike to them. Among their occasional visitors was a chief called Kahoora, who headed the party that cut off Captain Furneaux's people. He was far from being beloved by his countrymen, some of whom even importuned Captain Cook to kill him, at the same time expressing their disapprobation of him in the severest terms.

Early in the morning of the 16th, Captains Cook and Clerke, and several of the officers and sailors, accompanied by Omai and two New-Zealanders, set out, in five boats, to collect fodder for the cattle. Having proceeded about three leagues up the sound, they landed on the east side, where they cut a sufficient quantity of grass to load the two launches. On their return down the sound, they paid a visit to Grass Cove, the place where Captain Furneaux's people had been massacred.

They here met with an old Indian whom the captain had seen when he visited this place before. He, and another New-Zealander, received them on the beach, armed with the spear and patoo, though not without manifest signs of fear. Their apprehensions, however, were quickly dissipated by a few presents, which brought down to the shore two or three others of the family. The commodore, being desirous of enquiring into the particular circumstances relative to the massacre of Captain Furneaux's men, fixed upon Omai as an interpreter for that purpose, as his language was a dialect of that of New-Zealand. Pedro, and the other natives who were present, none of whom had been concerned in that unfortunate transaction, answered every question without reserve. Their information imported, that while the English were at dinner, some of the natives stole, or snatched from them, some fish and bread, for which offence they received some blows; a quarrel immediately ensued, and two of the savages were shot dead, by the only two muskets that were fired; for, before a third was discharged, the natives rushed furiously upon the English, and being superior in number, destroyed them all. It appears that there was no premeditated plan of bloodshed, and that, if these thefts had not been rather too hastily resented, all mischief would have been avoided; for Kahoora's greatest enemies acknowledged that he had no previous intention of quarrelling. With regard to the boat, some said that it had been pulled to pieces and burnt; while others asserted that it had been carried off by a party of strangers.

On the 18th, Pedro and his whole family came to reside near our navigators. The proper name of this chief was Matahouah; but some of Captain Cook's people

had given him the appellation of Pedro in a former voyage. On the 20th they had a violent storm, in consequence of which both their ships struck their yards and top-masts. These tempests are frequent here; and the nearer the shore the more sensible are their effects.

On Friday the 21st a tribe or family of about thirty persons came from the upper part of the sound to visit them. Their chief was named Tomatongeauooranuc: he was about the age of forty-five, and had a frank, cheerful countenance; and, indeed, the rest of his tribe were, upon the whole, the handsomest of the New-Zealanders that they had ever seen. By this time upwards of two-thirds of the natives of Queen Charlotte's Sound had settled near them, numbers of whom daily resorted to the ships, and their encampment on shore; but the latter was most frequented during the time when the men there were making seal blubber; for the savages were so fond of train-oil, that they relished the very dregs of the casks, and skimmings of the kettle; and considered the pure stinking oil as a most delightful feast.

When they had procured a competent supply of hay, wood, and water, they struck their tents, and the next morning (the 24th) weighed out of the cove. But the wind not being so fair as they could have wished, they were obliged to cast anchor again near the island of Mortuara. While they were getting under sail, Tomatongeauooranuc, Matahouah, and many others of the natives, came to take leave of them. These two chiefs having requested Captain Cook to present them with some hogs and goats, he gave to Tomatongeauooranuc two pigs, a boar and a sow; and to Matahouah two goats, a male and female, after they had promised not

to destroy them. It was said that the animals which Captain Furneaux had left here were all dead, however, Captain Cook was afterwards informed that Tiratou, a popular chief, had in his possession many cocks and hens, besides a sow.

Before they had been long at anchor here, several canoes, filled with natives, came towards them, and a brisk trade was carried on with them for the curiosities of this place. In one of these canoes was Kahoora, whom Omai immediately pointed out to Captain Cook, and solicited him to shoot that chief, he also threatened to be himself his executioner, if he should ever presume to pay another visit. These menaces of Omai had, however, so little influence upon Kahoora, that he returned the next morning, accompanied with his whole family. He was leader of the party who had killed the crew of the Adventure's boat. When asked why he destroyed them, he looked confounded, hung down his head, folded his arms, and seemed in expectation of immediate death: but, as soon as he was assured of safety he became cheerful. Captain Cook admired his courage, and was pleased with the confidence which he reposed in him; for he placed his whole safety in the uniform declarations of the captain, that he had always been a friend to the natives, and would continue in the same sentiments till they gave him reason to behave otherwise; that he should think no more of their barbarous treatment of his countrymen, as that transaction had happened long ago; but that, if they should ever venture to make a second attempt of that kind, they might rest assured of meeting with an adequate punishment.

Before their arrival in New-Zealand, Omai had ex-

pressed a desire of taking one of the natives with him to his own country. He soon had an opportunity of gratifying his inclination, for a youth named Taweiharooa, the only son of a deceased chief, offered to accompany him, and took up his residence on board Captain Cook caused it to be made known to him and all his friends, that if the youth departed with them he would never return. This declaration, however, had no effect. The day before they quitted the cove, Tiratoutou, his mother, came to receive her last present from Omai; and the same evening she and her son parted, with all the marks of the tenderest affection. But she said she would weep no more, and faithfully kept her word; for the next morning, when she returned to take her last farewell of Taweiharooa, she was quite cheerful all the time she remained on board, and departed with great unconcern. A boy of about ten years of age accompanied Taweiharooa as a servant: his name was Kokoa. He was presented to Captain Cook by his own father, who parted with him with such indifference, as to strip him, and leave him entirely naked. The Captain having in vain endeavoured to convince these people of the great improbability of these youths ever returning home, at length consented to their going.

According to our navigators' observations, the inhabitants of New-Zealand seem to live under continual apprehensions of being destroyed by each other; most of their tribes having, as they think, sustained injuries from some other tribe, which they are ever eager to revenge: and it is not improbable, that the desire of a good meal is frequently a great incitement. They generally steal upon the adverse party in the night, and if

they chance to find them unguarded, which is seldom the case, they kill every one without distinction, without sparing even the women and children: when they have completed the inhuman massacre, they either gorge themselves on the spot, or carry off as many dead bodies as they can, and feast on them at home, with the most horrid acts of brutality. If they are discovered before they have time to execute their sanguinary purpose, they usually steal off again, and sometimes they are pursued and attacked by the adverse party, in their turn. They never give quarter, or take prisoners, so that the vanquished must trust to flight alone for safety. From this state of perpetual hostility, and this destructive mode of carrying it on, a New Zealander derives such habitual vigilance and circumspection, that he is scarce ever off his guard: and, indeed, these people have the most powerful motives to be vigilant, as the preservation of both soul and body depends on it: for it is a part of their creed, that the soul of the man whose flesh is devoured by his enemies, is condemned to an incessant fire; while the soul of him whose body has been rescued from those that slew him, as well as the souls of those who die a natural death, ascend to the mansions of the gods.

Polygamy is adopted among these people, and it is common for one man to have two or three wives. The women are marriageable at an early age; and those who are unmarried find difficulty in procuring subsistence.

According to Taweiharooa's account, there are snakes and lizards here, of an enormous size. The latter he described as being eight feet long, and equal to a man's body in circumference. He said that they burrow in the ground; that they sometimes seize and devour men,

and are killed by making fires at the mouths of their holes. In order to shew us what he meant, he drew, with his own hand, very good representations of a lizard and snake on a piece of paper.

Their public contentions are almost perpetual, for war is their principal profession, as appears from their number of weapons, and their dexterity in using them. Before the onset they join in a war song, keeping the exactest time; and, by degrees, work themselves into a kind of frantic fury, accompanied with the most horrid distortions of their tongues, eyes and mouths, in order to deter their enemies. To this succeeds a circumstance that is most horrid, cruel, and disgraceful to human nature, which is mangling and cutting to pieces (even when not perfectly dead) the bodies of their enemies; and, after roasting them, devouring the flesh with peculiar pleasure and satisfaction. It might naturally be supposed, that those who could be capable of such excess of cruelty, must be totally destitute of human feeling; and yet they lament the loss of their friends in a manner the most tender and affectionate. Both men and women, upon the death of their relations or friends, bewail them with the most miserable cries; at the same time cutting large gashes in their cheeks and foreheads, with shells, or pieces of flint, till the blood flows copiously, and mixes with their tears. They also carve a resemblance of an human figure, and hang it about their necks, as a memorial of those who were dear to them. They also perform the ceremony of lamenting and cutting for joy, at the return of a friend who has been some time absent.

Their language is neither harsh nor disagreeable.

Whatever qualities are requisite to make a language musical, obtain to a considerable degree in this, if we may judge from the melody of their songs. It is not, indeed, so comprehensive as our European languages, which owe their perfection to long and gradual improvement.

CHAP. II.

Departure from the Sound—Island of Mangeea—Description of the Natives, &c.—Island of Wateeoo—Introduced to three Chiefs—Dance of Women—Omai's Apprehensions and Distress—Island of Otahootaia—Of Komango—Annamooka—Visit from a Chief of Tongataboo—Proceed to Hapaee—Entertainments there—Tongataboo—Interviews with the Chiefs—Amusements, &c.—Various Transactions—Solemnity at Mooa—Arrival at Eooa—Departure from the Friendly Isles.

ON the 25th of February they left the Sound, and made sail through Cook's Straits. As soon as they had lost sight of land, the two young New Zealanders heartily repented of the adventrous step they had taken. Though they endeavoured, as far as lay in their power, to sooth them, they wept, both in public and private; and gave vent to their sorrows in a kind of song, which seemed to express their praises of their country and people, from which they were now, in all probability, to be for ever separated. They continued in this state for several days, till, at length, the agitation of their minds began to subside, and their sea-sickness, which had aggravated their grief, wore off. Their lamentations then became less and less frequent; their native country, their kindred and friends, were gradually forgotten, and they appeared to be firmly attached to our navigators.

On the 29th of March, as the Resolution was stand-

ing to the north-east, the Discovery made a signal of seeing land. They soon found it to be a small island, and stood for it till the evening, when it was at the distance of two or three leagues. The next morning, at day-break, they bore up for the west side of the island, and saw several people wading to the reef, where, as they observed the ship leaving them quickly, they remained. But others, who soon appeared, followed her course; and some of them assembled in small bodies, making great shouts. Upon their nearer approach to the shore, they saw many of the natives running along the beach, and, by the assistance of their glasses, could perceive that they were armed with long spears and clubs, which they brandished in the air with signs of threatening, or, as some supposed, with invitations to land. Most of them were naked, except having a kind of girdle, which was brought up between their thighs; but some of them wore about their shoulders pieces of cloth, of various colours, white, striped, or chequered; and almost all of them had about their heads a white wrapper, in some degree resembling a turban. They were of a tawny complexion, robust, and about the middle size.

A small canoe was now launched from the most distant part of the beach, and a man getting into it, put off, as with a view of reaching the ship; but his courage failing, he quickly returned towards the beach. Another man soon after joined him in the canoe, and then both of them paddled towards the Resolution. They seemed, however, afraid to approach, till their apprehensions were partly removed by Omai, who addressed them in the language of Otaheite. Thus encouraged, they came near enough to receive some nails and beads, which, be-

ing tied to some wood, were thrown into the canoe. On Omai's abruptly asking them whether they ever eat human flesh, they replied in the negative, with equal abhorrence and indignation. One of them, named Mourooa, being questioned with regard to a scar on his forehead, said it was the consequence of a wound he had received in fighting with the natives of an island lying towards the north-east, who sometimes invaded them. They afterwards laid hands on a rope, but would not venture on board, telling Omai, that their countrymen on shore had suggested to them this caution; and had likewise directed them to enquire whence the ship came, and to procure information of the name of the captain. Their chief, they said, was called Orooaeeka; the name of the island was Mangeea.

The features of Mourooa were agreeable, and his disposition, to all appearance, was not less so; for he exhibited some droll gesticulations, which indicated humor and good nature. He also made others of a serious kind, and repeated some words with an air of devotion, before he would venture to take hold of the rope at the stern of the ship. He was lusty and well made, though not tall. His complexion was nearly of the same cast with that of the natives of the most southern parts of Europe. His companion was not so handsome. They had both strong, strait, black hair, tied together on the top of their heads with a piece of white cloth. They had long beards; and the inside of their arms, from the elbow to the shoulder, and some other parts, were tattooed. The lobe of their ears was slit to such a length, that one of them stuck there a knife and some beads, which were given him. The same person had hung about his neck, by way of ornament, two polished pearl-

shells, and a bunch of human hair, loosely twisted together. They wore a kind of girdles, and had on their feet a sort of sandals, made of a grassy substance interwoven, which our navigators observed were also worn by those whom they had seen on the beach. The canoe in which they came was the only one they saw. It was very narrow, and not above ten feet long, but strong and neatly made. The lower part was of white wood, but the upper part was black, and their paddles were made of wood of the same colour: these were broad at one end, and blunted, and about three feet long. The fore part had a flat board fastened over it, which projected out, to prevent the water from getting in. It had an upright stern, five feet high, which terminated at the top in a kind of fork. They paddled indifferently either end of the canoe forward.

As soon as the ships were in a proper station, Captain Cook sent out two boats to endeavour to find a convenient place for landing. In one of them he went himself, and had no sooner put off from the ship, than the two men in the canoe paddled towards his boat; and when they were come alongside, Mouroa, without hesitation, stepped into her. Omai, who was with the captain, was desired to enquire of the islander where they could land; upon which he directed them to two places. But they soon observed, with regret, that the attempt at either place was impracticable, on account of the surf, unless at the risk of having their boats destroyed. Nor were they more successful in their search for anchorage, as they could find no bottom till within a cable's length of the breakers, where they met with from forty to twenty fathoms depth, over sharp rocks of coral.

While they thus reconnoitred the shore of Mangeea,

the natives thronged down upon the reef, all armed. Mouroa, who still remained in the boat with Captain Cook, thinking, perhaps, that this warlike appearance deterred them from landing, commanded them to retire. As many of them complied, it was imagined that he was a person of some consequence: indeed, if he was not misunderstood, he was brother to the king of the island. Several of them, instigated by curiosity, swam from the shore to the boats, and came on board them without reserve. There was some difficulty to keep them out, and prevent their pilfering whatever they could lay their hands on. At length, when they observed them returning to the ships, they all left them except Mouroa, who, though not without manifest indications of fear, accompanied the commodore on board the Resolution. The cattle, and other new objects that he saw there, did not strike him with much surprize; his mind, perhaps, being too much occupied about his own safety, to allow him to attend to other things. He seemed very uneasy, therefore, after he had continued a short time on board, Captain Cook ordered a boat to carry him towards the land. In his way out of the cabin, happening to stumble over one of the goats, he stopped, looked at the animal, and asked Omai what bird it was; but not receiving an immediate answer from him, he put the same question to some of the people who were upon deck. The boat having conveyed him near the surf, he leaped into the water, and swam ashore. His countrymen, eager to learn from him what he had seen, flocked round him as soon as he had landed; in which situation they remained when our navigators lost sight of them.

Having quitted Mangeea in the afternoon of the 30th, which they were obliged to leave unvisited, though it

seemed capable of supplying all their necessaries, they proceeded on a northerly course, and again discovered land on the 31st, at the distance of nine or ten leagues. The next morning they were abreast of its north end, within four leagues of it. It now appeared to be an island nearly of the same extent with that which they had just left. Another island, much smaller, was also descried right ahead. Though they could soon have reached this, they preferred the larger one, as being most likely to furnish food for the cattle. They therefore made sail to it; but there being little wind, and that unfavourable, they were still about two leagues to leeward at eight o'clock the succeeding morning. The commodore soon after dispatched three armed boats, under the command of Mr. Gore, his first lieutenant, in search of a landing-place and anchoring-ground. As their boats were putting off, they saw several canoes coming from the shore, which repaired first to the Discovery, as that ship was the nearest. Not long after, three of these canoes, each conducted by one man, came alongside of the Resolution. They are long and narrow, and are supported by out-riggers: the head is flat above, but prow-like below; and the stern is about four feet high Our navigators gave them some knives, beads, and other trifles; and they presented some cocoa nuts, in consequence of being asked for; but they did not part with them by way of exchange, as they seemed to have no idea of barter or traffic. One of them after a little persuasion came on board, and the other two soon followed his example. They appeared to be perfectly at their ease, and free from all apprehension. After their departure, a man arrived in another canoe,

bringing a bunch of plaintains, as a present to Captain Cook, who gave him in return a piece of red cloth and an axe. They were afterwards informed by Omai, that this present had been sent from the king of the island. Soon after, a double canoe, containing twelve of the islanders, came towards them. On approaching the ship they recited some words in concert, by way of chorus, one of them first giving the word before each repetition. Having finished this solemn chant, they came alongside, and asked for the chief. As soon as Captain Cook had made his appearance, a pig and some cocoa-nuts were conveyed into the ship; and the captain was also presented with a piece of matting, by the principal person in the canoe, when he and his companions had got on board.

These new visitors were introduced into the cabin, and conducted to other parts of the ship. Though some objects seemed to surprise them, nothing could fix their attention. They were afraid to venture near the cows and horses, of whose nature they could form no conception. As for the sheep and goats, they gave them to understand that they knew them to be birds. Though the commodore bestowed on his new friend what he supposed would be the most acceptable present, yet he seemed somewhat disappointed: he was afterwards informed, that this islander eagerly wished to procure a dog, of which kind of animals this island was destitute, though the natives knew that the race existed in other islands of the Pacific Ocean. Captain Clerke had received a similar present, with the same view, from another man, who was equally disappointed in his expectations.

These people were in general of the middle stature, and not unlike the Mangeeans. Their hair either flowed loosely over their shoulders, or was tied on the crown of the head; and though in some it was frizzled, yet that, as well as the straight sort, was long. Some of the young men were handsome. Like the inhabitants of Mangeea, they wore girdles of glazed cloth, or fine matting, the ends of which were brought between their thighs. Their ears were bored, and they wore about their necks, by way of ornament, a sort of broad grass, stained with red, and strung with berries of the nightshade. Many of them were curiously marked, or tattooed, from the middle downwards, particularly upon their legs; which made them appear as if they wore boots. Their beards were long, and they had a kind of sandals on their feet. They were frank and chearful in their deportment, and very friendly and good-natured.

Lieutenant Gore returned from his excursion in the afternoon, and reported that he had examined the west side of the island, without being able to find a place where the ships could ride in safety, or a boat could land, the shore being bounded by a steep coral rock, against which a continual surf broke with extraordinary violence. But as the inhabitants seemed extremely friendly, and as desirous of their landing as they themselves were, Mr. Gore was of opinion that they might be prevailed upon to bring off to the boats beyond the surf, such articles as they were most in need of. As they had little or no wind, the delay of a day or two was of small consideration, and therefore the captain resolved to try the experiment the next morning. They

observed, soon after day-break, some canoes coming towards the ships, one of which directed its course to the Resolution. There were in it some cocoa-nuts and plantains, and a hog, for which the natives demanded a dog, refusing every other thing that was offered by way of exchange. Though one of the gentlemen on board had a dog and a bitch, which were great nuisances in the ship, and which might have served to propagate a race of so useful an animal in this island, yet he could not be prevailed upon to part with them. However, to gratify these people, Omai gave them a favourite dog he had brought from Great Britain; with which acquisition they were highly pleased.

On the 3d of April Captain Cook detached Mr. Gore with three boats, to make trial of the experiment which he had himself proposed. Two of the natives, who had been on board, accompanied him; and Omai served as an interpreter. The ships being a full league from the island when the boats put off, and the wind being inconsiderable, it was twelve o'clock before they could work up to it. They then perceived their three boats just without the surf, and an amazing number of the islanders on the shore, abreast of them. In order to observe their motions, and afford them such assistance as they might occasionally require, the commodore kept as near the shore as was consistent with prudence. Some of the natives now and then brought a few cocoa-nuts to the ships, and exchanged them for whatever was offered them. These occasional visits diminished the captain's solicitude about his people who had landed. On their return they found that Mr. Gore, Mr. Anderson, Mr. Burney, and Omai, were the only persons who had landed. They rowed towards a sandy beach, where a

great number of the natives had assembled, and came to an anchor at the distance of a hundred yards from the reef. Several of the islanders swam off, bringing cocoa-nuts with them: and Omai gave them to understand, that the English were desirous of landing. Soon after two canoes came off; and to inspire the natives with greater confidence, Mr. Gore and his companions resolved to go unarmed. Mr. Anderson and Lieutenant Burney went in one canoe, a little before the other; and their conductors watching with great attention the motions of the surf, landed them safely on the reef. A native took hold of each of them, with a view of supporting them in walking over the rugged rocks to the beach, where several others, holding in their hands green boughs, met them, and saluted them by the junction of noses. They were conducted from the beach amidst a vast multitude of people, who flocked around them with the most eager curiosity; and being led up an avenue of cocoa palms, soon came to a number of men, arranged in two rows, and armed with clubs. Proceeding onward among these, they found a person who appeared to be a chief, sitting cross-legged on the ground, and cooling himself with a kind of triangular fan, made from the leaf of the cocoa-palm, with a polished handle of black wood. He wore in his ears large bunches of beautiful feathers, of a red colour; but had no other mark to distinguish him from the rest of the people. Mr. Anderson and Lieutenant Burney saluted him as he sat, marched on among the men armed with clubs, and came to a second chief, adorned like the former, and occupied, like him, in fanning himself. He was remarkable for his size and corpulence, though he did not appear to be above thirty years of age. They were

conducted in the same manner to a third chief, who seemed older than the two former: he also was sitting, and was ornamented with red feathers. After they had saluted him as they had done the others, he desired them both to sit down; which they willingly consented to, being greatly fatigued with walking, and with the extreme heat they felt amidst the surrounding multitude.

The people being ordered to separate, the gentlemen saw, at a small distance, about twenty young women, adorned like the chiefs with red feathers, engaged in a dance, which they performed to a slow and solemn air, sung by them all. They then rose up, and walked forward to see these dancers, who, without paying them the smallest attention, still continued their dance. They seemed to be directed by a man, who, in the capacity of a prompter, mentioned the several motions they were to make. They never changed the spot; and though their feet were not entirely at rest, this exercise consisted more in moving their fingers very nimbly, holding their hands at the same time in a prone position near the face, and occasionally clapping them together. Their dancing and singing were performed in the exactest concert. They had probably been instructed with extraordinary care, and selected for this ceremony, being superior in beauty to most of those who were in the crowd. They were, in general, rather stout, and of an olive complexion, with black hair flowing in ringlets down their necks. Their shape and limbs were elegantly formed; for their dress, consisting only of a piece of glazed cloth tied round the waist, which scarcely reached so low as the knees, the gentlemen had an opportunity of observing almost every part. Their features were rather too full to constitute a perfect beauty. Their

eyes were of a deep black, and their countenances expressed a great degree of modesty and complacency.

Before these beauteous females had finished their dance, the gentlemen heard a noise, as if some horses had been galloping towards them; and, on turning their eyes aside, they saw the people armed with clubs, who had been desired to entertain them, as they supposed, with an exhibition of their mode of fighting; which they now did, one party pursuing another who ran away.

Lieutenant Burney and Mr. Anderson began now to look about for Mr. Gore and Omai, whom they at length found coming up, as much incommoded by the crowds of people as themselves had been, and introduced in the same manner to the three chiefs; the names of whom were Otteroo, Taroa, and Fatouweera. Each of these expecting a present, Mr. Gore gave them such things as he had brought with him for that purpose; after which he informed the chiefs of his views in coming on shore, but was desired to wait till the next day before he should have what was wanted. They now seemed to endeavour to separate the gentlemen from each other, every one of whom had his respective circle to surround and gaze at him. Mr. Anderson was, at one time, upwards of an hour apart from his friends; and when he told the chief who was near him, that he wished to speak to Omai, his request was peremptorily refused. At the same time he found that the people pilfered several trifling things which were in his pocket; and on his complaining of this treatment to the chief, he justified their behaviour. From these circumstances, Mr. Anderson began to apprehend that they designed to detain them. In this situation, he asked for something to eat; upon

which they brought him some cocoa-nuts, bread-fruit, and a sort of sour pudding; and when he complained of the heat occasioned by the multitude of people, the chief condescended to fan him.

Lieutenant Burney going to the place where Mr. Anderson was, the latter informed him of his suspicions; and to try whether they were well-founded or not, they both attempted to get to the beach: but they were soon stopped by some of the natives, who said they must return to the place which they had left. On their coming up, they found Omai under the same apprehensions; but he had, as he imagined, an additional motive of terror; for, having observed that they had dug a hole in the ground for an oven, which they were not heating, he could assign no other reason for it than that they intended to roast and devour his party.

Thus the gentlemen were detained the greatest part of the day, being sometimes separated and sometimes together; but continually in a croud, who frequently desired them to uncover parts of their skin, the sight of which struck the islanders with admiration. They at the same time rifled the pockets of their companions: one of them snatched from Mr. Gore a bayonet, which hung by his side. This being represented to one of the chiefs, he pretended to send a person in search of it, but probably countenanced the theft; for Omai, soon after, had a dagger stolen from his side in the same manner. They now brought some green boughs, as emblems of friendship, and sticking the ends of them in the ground, desired that the gentlemen would hold them as they sat, giving them to understand, that they must stay and eat with them. The sight of a pig lying near the oven which they had prepared and heated, re-

moved Omai's apprehensions of being put into it himself, and made him think that it might be intended for the repast of him and his friends. The chief also sent some of his people to provide food for the cattle, and they returned with a few plaintain trees, which they conveyed to the boats. In the mean time, Messrs. Burney and Anderson made a second attempt to get to the beach; but, on their arrival, they found themselves watched by people who seemed to have been stationed there for that purpose. Finding that obedience to their will was the only method of procuring better treatment, the gentlemen returned to the place they had quitted; and the natives now promised, that after they had partaken of a repast which had been prepared for them, they should be furnished with a canoe to carry them off to their boats. Accordingly, the second chief to whom they had been presented, having seated himself on a low stool, and directed the multitude to form a large ring, made them sit down by him. A number of cocoa-nuts were now brought, with a quantity of baked plantains; and a piece of the pig that had been dressed was placed before each of them. Their fatigue, however, had taken away their appetites; but they ate a little to please their entertainers. It being now near sun-set, the islanders sent down to the beach the remainder of the provisions that had been dressed, to be carried to the ships. The gentlemen found a canoe prepared to put them off to their boats, which the natives did with great caution; but as they were pushing the canoe into the surf, one of them snatched a bag out of her, which contained a pocket-pistol belonging to Mr. Anderson, who calling out to the thief with marks of the highest displeasure, he swam back to the canoe with the bag. The

islanders then put them on board the boats, with the cocoa-nuts, plantains, and other provisions; and they immediately rowed back to the ships.

The restrained situation of these gentlemen gave them very little opportunity of observing the country; for they were seldom a hundred yards from the place where they had been introduced to the chiefs, and consequently were confined to the surrounding objects. The first thing that attracted their notice was the number of people, which must have been at least two thousand. Except a few, those who had come on board the ships were all of an inferior class; for a great number of those that the gentlemen met with on shore, had a superior degree of demeanor, and their complexion was much whiter. In general, they had their hair, which was long and black, tied on the crown of the head. Many of the young men were perfect models in shape, and of a delicate complexion. The old men were, many of them, corpulent; and they, as well as the young, had a remarkable smoothness of skin. Their general dress consisted of a piece of cloth wrapped about the waist, but some had pieces of mats, very curiously variegated with black and white, formed into a kind of jacket without sleeves; while others wore conical caps made of the core of a cocoa-nut, interwoven with beads. In their ears, which were pierced, they hung pieces of the membraneous part of some plant, or stuck there some odoriferous flower. The chiefs, and other persons of rank, had two little balls, with a common bass, made of bone, which they hung round their necks with small cord. Red feathers are here considered as a particular mark of distinction; for none but the chiefs, and the young women who danced, assumed

them. Some of the men were punctured all over the sides and back, and several women on their legs. The elderly ladies had their hair cut short, and many of them were cut all over the fore part of the body in oblique lines. The wife of a chief appeared with her child, laid in a piece of red cloth which had been presented to her husband; she suckled the infant with great tenderness. Another chief introduced his daughter, who was young, beautiful, and modest. She gazed on our navigators with a kind of anxious concern, that seemed to struggle with her natural timidity. No personal deformities were observed in either sex.

About a third part of the men were armed with spears and clubs, the latter of which were generally about six feet long, made of a hard black wood, neatly polished. The spears were formed of the same wood, simply pointed, and were in general twelve feet long; but some were so short as to seem intended for darts.

They preserved their canoes from the sun under the shade of various trees. The gentlemen saw eight or ten of them, all double ones; that is, two single ones fastened together by rafters lashed across. They were about four feet deep, and in length about twenty feet, and the sides were rounded with a plank raised upon them. Two of these canoes were curiously stained all over with black, in innumerable small figures, as triangles, squares, &c. The paddles were almost elliptical, and about four feet long.

The soil, towards the sea, for that of the island was not ascertained, is nothing more than a bank of coral, generally steep and rugged, which, though it has probably been for many centuries exposed to the weather, has suffered no farther change than becoming black on

its surface. The reef or rock, with which the shore is lined, runs different breadths into the sea, where it resembles a high steep wall: it is of a brownish colour, and nearly even with the surface of the water; and though its texture is rather porous, it is capable of withstanding the washing of the surf which constantly breaks upon it.

Omai, while he attended Mr. Gore as interpreter, was very much questioned by the natives concerning the English, their country, ships, and arms; in answer to which, he told them, among many other particulars, that their country had ships as large as their island, on board of which were implements of war of such dimensions as to contain several people within them; one of which would demolish the island at one shot. As for the guns in the two ships, he acknowledged they were but small in comparison with the former; yet even with these, he said, they could with great ease, at a considerable distance, destroy the island, and every soul in it. On their enquiring by what means this could be done, Omai produced some cartridges from his pocket, and having submitted to inspection the balls and the gunpowder, by which they were to be set in motion, he disposed the latter upon the ground, and, by means of a piece of lighted wood, from the oven where dinner was dressing, set it on fire. The sudden blast, the mingled flame and smoke, that instantaneously succeeded, filled the natives with such astonishment, that they no longer doubted the formidable power of the English weapons, which probably induced them to liberate the gentlemen; particularly as Omai assured them, if he and his friends did not return on board the same day, that the Commodore would fire upon the island.

Omai had scarcely landed on the beach, when he found here three of his own countrymen. Their story, as related by him, is a very affecting one. About twenty persons, male and female, had embarked in a canoe at Otaheite, with an intention of crossing over to Ulietea; but they were prevented by contrary winds from reaching the latter, or returning to the former island. Their stock of provisions being soon exhausted, they suffered inconceivable hardships. They passed many days without sustenance, in consequence of which their number gradually diminished, worn out by famine and fatigue. Only four men survived, when their canoe was overset. The destruction of this small remnant now seemed inevitable; however, they continued hanging by the side of the vessel, during some of the last days, till they providentially came in sight of the inhabitants of this island, who sent out canoes and brought them on shore. One of these four had since died. The other three were so well satisfied with the generous treatment they met with here, that they refused the offer made them by the captain, at the request of Omai, of taking them on board their ships, and restoring them to their native islands. They had arrived upon this coast at least twelve years ago.

The natives of this island call it by the name of Wateeoo. It is situated in the longitude of 201° 45' east, and in the latitude of 20° 1' south; and is about six leagues in circuit. It is a beautiful spot, with a surface covered with verdure, and composed of hills and plains. The soil, in some parts, is light and sandy; but, further up the country, they saw from the ship, by the assistance of their glasses, a reddish cast on the rising grounds There the islanders build their houses, for they could

perceive several of them, which were long and spacious. Its produce is nearly the same with that of Mangeea.

On the third of April they got up with Otakootaia, when Captain Cook immediately dispatched Mr. Gore with two boats, to see if he could land, and get subsistence for their cattle. Their boats having reached the west side of the island, they ventured in, and Mr. Gore and his attendants arrived safe on shore.

The supply obtained here was about two hundred cocoa-nuts for themselves, and for their cattle some grass, and a quantity of the leaves and branches of young cocoa-trees, and the wharra.

This island lies about three or four leagues from Wateeoo, is in the latitude of 19° 15′ S. and the longitude of 201° 37′ E. and is supposed not to exceed three miles in circuit. It is entirely destitute of water. Cocoa palms where the only common trees found there, of which there were several clusters, and great quantities of the wharra or pandanus.

A beautiful cuckoo, of a chesnut brown, variegated with black, was the only bird seen amongst the trees; but, upon the shore, were a small sort of curlew, blue and white herons, some egg-birds, and a great number of noddies.

One of the company caught a lizard running up a tree; though small, it had a most forbidding aspect. Many of another sort were also seen. Infinite numbers of a kind of moth, elegantly speckled with black, white, and red, frequented the bushes towards the sea. Some other sorts of moths and pretty butterflies were seen.

At this time there were no fixed inhabitants upon the

island; but they discovered a few empty huts, which convinced them of its being, at least, occasionally visited. Monuments, consisting of several large stones, were also erected under the shade of some trees: there were also some smaller ones, with which several places were enclosed, where they supposed their dead had been buried. Mr. Gore left some nails and a hatchet in one of the huts, for the use of those who might visit the island in future.

The boats having been hoisted in, they made sail again to the northward, and got sight of Hervey's Island on the 6th about day-break, at the distance of about three leagues. They approached it about eight o'clock, and observed several canoes coming from the shore towards the ships. They were rather surprized at this circumstance, as no traces or signs of inhabitants were seen when the island was first discovered by Captain Cook in 1773. Advancing still towards the island, six or seven canoes immediately came near the ships, with from three to six men in each of them. They stopped at the distance of about a stone's throw, and it was with difficulty that Omai prevailed on them to come alongside; but they could not be induced to trust themselves on board. Indeed, their disorderly behaviour did not indicate a disposition to be trusted, or to be treated well. They attempted to steal some oars out of the Discovery's boat, and struck a man for endeavouring to prevent them. They also cut away a net containing meat, which hung over the stern of that ship: this they absolutely refused to restore, but it was afterwards purchased of them. Those who were about the Resolution behaved equally disorderly and daring; for, with a sort of hooks made of a long stick, they openly endeavour-

ed to rob them of several things, and actually got a frock belonging to one of the crew. It appeared that they had a knowledge of bartering, for they exchanged some fish for small nails, of which they were extravagantly fond. Pieces of paper, or any other trifling articles, that were thrown to them, they caught with the greatest avidity; and if what was thrown fell into the sea, they immediately plunged in to swim after it.

Though the distance between Hervey's Island and Wateeoo is not very great, the inhabitants differ greatly from each other, both in person and disposition. The colour of the natives of Hervey's Island is of a deeper cast, and several of them had a fierce savage aspect, like the natives of New-Zealand, though some were fairer. Their hair was long and black, either hanging loose about their shoulders, or tied in a bunch on the top of the head. Some few, indeed, had it cropped short, and, in two or three of them, it was of a red or brownish colour. Their clothing was a narrow piece of mat, bound several times round the lower part of the body, and passing between the thighs. A fine cap of feathers was seen lying in one of the canoes, and some amongst them were ornamented with the shell of a pearl-oyster, polished, and hung about the neck. The mode of ornament, so prevalent among the natives of this ocean, of puncturing or tattooing their bodies, not one of them had adopted; but though they were singular in this respect, their being of the same common race is not to be doubted. Their language more resembled the dialect of Otaheite, than that of Mangeea or Wateeoo. Their food consisted of cocoa-nuts, fish, and turtle, being destitute of dogs and hogs, and the island not producing bread-fruit or plantains. Their canoes, (near thirty of

which appeared at one time in sight) are tolerably large, and well built, and bear some resemblance to those of Wateeoo.

The Captain having dispatched Lieutenant King with two armed boats, to sound and reconnoitre the coast, the natives immediately suspended their traffic, pushing for shore as fast as possible, and came no more near the ships. The boats returned at three o'clock, and Mr. King informed the captain that he could find no anchorage; and that the boats could advance no farther than the outer edge of the reef, which was almost a quarter of a mile from the dry land. He said that a number of the natives came upon the reef, armed with clubs and long pikes, meaning, as he supposed, to oppose his landing; though, at the same time, they threw cocoa-nuts to the men, and requested them to come on shore; but, notwithstanding this seeming friendly treatment, the women were very active in bringing down a fresh supply of darts and spears.

Captain Cook considered that as they could not bring the ships to an anchor, the attempt to procure grass here would be attended with delay and danger. Being thus disappointed in all the islands after their leaving New-Zealand, and having, from variety of circumstances, been unavoidably retarded in their progress, it was in vain to think of doing any thing this year in the high latitudes of the northern hemisphere, from which they were so far distant: the captain, therefore, determined to bear away for the Friendly Islands, where he knew he could be well supplied with every thing he wanted: and it being necessary to run night and day, he ordered Captain Clerke to keep a league a-head of the Resolution.

They steered west by south, with a fine breeze, April the 7th. Captain Cook proposed to proceed first to Middleburgh, or Eooa, thinking they might, perhaps, have provision enough for the cattle, to last till they should arrive at that island. But the next day, about noon, those faint breezes that had so long retarded them again returned; and they found it necessary to get into the latitude of Palmerston's and Savage Islands, (discovered by Captain Cook in 1774) that, in case of necessity, recourse might be had to them.

These light breezes continued till Tuesday the 10th, when the wind blew some hours fresh from the N , and N. N. W. In the afternoon they had some very heavy rain, attended with thunder squalls. When these squalls had blown over, the wind was very unsettled, both in strength and in position, till the next day at noon, when it fixed at N. W. and N. N. W., and blew a fresh breeze.

At day-break, however, on the 13th, they perceived Palmerston's Island bearing W. by S., at the distance of about five leagues; but did not get up with it till the next morning at eight. Captain Cook then dispatched three boats from the Resolution, and one from the Discovery, with a proper officer in each, to search for a convenient landing place; they being now under the necessity of procuring here some provender for their cattle, or they must certainly have lost them.

The boats first examined the most southerly islet; and not succeeding there, ran down to the E., where they immediately landed. Captain Cook then bore down with the ships till they were abreast of the place, where they kept standing off and on, there being no bottom

to be found to anchor upon. This, however, was of no material consequence, as the island was not inhabited.

At one o'clock one of the boats returned, laden with scurvy-grass and young cocoa-trees, which was at this time a most excellent repast for the cattle, and an account that the island abounded with such produce, and also with the wahrra-tree and cocoa-nuts. Captain Cook accordingly went ashore in a small boat, accompanied by Captain Clerke. The island does not exceed a mile in circumference, and is not elevated above three feet beyond the level of the sea. It consisted almost entirely of a coral sand, with a small mixture of blackish mould, which appeared to be produced from rotten vegetables. This poor soil is, however, covered with the same kinds of shrubs and bushes as they had seen at Otakootaia, though not in so great variety. They perceived a great number of man of war birds, tropic birds, and two sorts of boobies, which were then laying their eggs, and so exceedingly tame as to permit them to take them off their nests, which consist only of a few sticks loosely put together. These tropic birds differ essentially from the common sort, being of a beautiful white, slightly tinged with red, and having two long tail-feathers of a deepish crimson. They killed a considerable number of each sort, which, though not the most delicate kind of food, were highly acceptable to them, who had been a long time confined to a salt diet. They saw plenty of red crabs creeping about among the trees; and caught several fish, which, when the sea retreated, had been left in holes upon the reef.

At one part of the reef, which bounds the lake within, almost even with the surface, there was a large bed of

coral, which afforded a most enchanting prospect. Its base, which was fixed to the shore, extended so far that it could not be seen, so that it appeared to be suspended in the water. The sea was then unruffled, and the refulgence of the sun exposed the various sorts of coral in the most beautiful order; some parts luxuriantly branching into the water, others appearing in vast variety of figures, and the whole greatly heightened by spangles of the richest colours, glowing from a number of large clams, interspersed in every part. Even this delightful scene was greatly improved by the multitude of beautiful fishes, that gently glided along, seemingly with the most perfect security.

Except a piece of a canoe that was found upon the beach, no traces were discoverable of inhabitants having ever been here; and probably that may have drifted from some other island. They were surprised, however, at perceiving some small brown rats on this little island.

The boats being laden, Captain Cook returned on board, leaving Mr. Gore and his party to pass the night on shore, to be ready for business early the next morning.

That day was accordingly spent in collecting subsistence for the cattle, consisting principally of tender branches of the wharra-tree, palm-cabbage, and young cocoa-nut trees. A sufficient supply of these having been procured by sun set, Captain Cook ordered all the people on board: but having very little wind, he determined to employ the next day, by endeavouring to get some cocoa-nuts from the next island to leeward: for this purpose they kept standing off and on all night; and, about nine o'clock in the morning, they went to the west side of the island, and landed from their boats

with little difficulty. The people immediately employed themselves in gathering cocoa-nuts, which they found in the greatest plenty; but it was a tedious operation to convey them to the boats, being obliged to carry them half a mile over the reef, up to the middle in water. Omai, who accompanied them, presently caught, with a scoop-net, as many fish as supplied the party on shore for dinner, besides sending a quantity to each ship. Men of war, and tropic birds, were found here in abundance, so that they fared most sumptuously. In these excursions to the uninhabited islands, Omai was of the greatest service. He caught the fish, and dressed them, as well as the birds they killed, after the fashion of his country, with a dexterity and chearfulness that did him honour.

This islet was nearly half larger than the other, and almost covered with cocoa-palms; the other productions were the same as at the first islets. There were not so many crabs here as at the last place, but they found some scorpions and other insects, and a much greater number of fish upon the reefs. Among the rest were some beautiful large spotted eels, which would raise themselves out of the water, and endeavour to bite their pursuers; there were also snappers, parrot-fish, and a brown spotted rock-fish, not larger than a haddock, so tame, that it would remain fixed, and gaze at them. Those who were left on shore all night were much pestered with musquitoes.

The islets comprehended under the name of Palmerston's Island, may be said to be the summits of a reef of coral-rock, covered only with a thin coat of sand; though clothed with trees and plants, like the low grounds of the high islands of this ocean.

Having left Palmerston's island, they steered west, in order to proceed to Annamooka; they had variable winds, with squalls, some thunder, and much rain. The heat, which had continued in the extreme for about a month, became much more disagreeable in this close rainy weather, and they apprehended it would soon be noxious. It is, however, remarkable, that there was not then a single person sick on board either of the ships.

They passed Savage Island (discovered by Captain Cook in 1774) in the night between the 24th and 25th; and, on the 28th, saw the islands to the eastward of Annamooka, bearing N. by W. about five leagues distant. They steered to the south, and then hauled up for Annamooka. At the approach of night, the weather being squally, with rain, they anchored in fifteen fathoms water.

Soon after two canoes paddled towards them, and came alongside without delay or hesitation: there were four men in one of the canoes, and three in the other. They brought with them some sugar-cane, bread-fruit, plantains, and cocoa-nuts, which they bartered for nails. After these canoes had left them they were visited by another, which did not long continue with them.

Early next morning, Captain Cook dispatched Lieutenant King with two boats to Komango, which was about five miles distant, in order to procure refreshments; and at five made the signal to weigh, to proceed to Annamooka.

On the 29th, as soon as it was day-light, they were visited by six or seven canoes, bringing with them two pigs, some fowls, several large wood-pigeons, small rails, and some violet-coloured coots, besides fruit and

roots of various kinds; which they exchanged for nails, hatchets, beads, &c. They had other articles of commerce, but Captain Cook gave particular orders that no curiosities should be purchased till the ships were supplied with provisions, and till they had obtained permission from him.

About noon, Mr. King's boat returned with seven hogs, some fowls, a quantity of fruit and roots, and also some grass for the cattle. His party was treated with great civility at Komango. The inhabitants did not appear to be numerous; and their huts, which almost joined to each other, were but indifferent. Tooboulangee, the chief of the island, and another, named Taipa, came on board with Mr. King. They brought a hog, as a present to Captain Cook, and promised to bring some more the next day.

The boats being aboard, they stood for Annamooka; and, having little wind, they intended to go between Annamooka-ette, i. e. Little Annamooka, and the breakers at the S. E.; but, on drawing near, they met with very irregular soundings, which obliged them to relinquish the design, and go to the southward. This carried them to leeward, and they found it necessary to spend the night under sail. It was dark and rainy, and they had the wind from every direction. The next morning, at day-light, they were farther off than they had been the preceding evening; and the wind was now right in their teeth.

They continued to ply, to very little purpose, the whole day; and, in the evening, anchored in thirty-nine fathoms water: the west point of Annamooka bearing E. N. E., four miles distant. Tooboulangee and Taipa, agreeable to promise, brought off some hogs for

Captain Cook: they obtained others, by bartering, from the different canoes that followed them, and a large quantity of fruit. It is remarkable, that those who visited them from the islands, on that day, would hardly part with any of their commodities to any one but Captain Cook.

At four the next morning, Captain Cook ordered a boat to be hoisted out, and the master to sound the S. W. side of Annamooka. When he returned, he reported that he had sounded between Great and Little Annamooka, where he found ten and twelve fathoms depth of water; that the place was very well sheltered from winds; but that no fresh water was to be had but at a considerable distance inland; and that, even there, it was neither plentiful nor good. For this very sufficient reason, Captain Cook resolved to anchor on the north side of the island, where, in his last voyage, he had found a convenient place for watering and landing. Though not above a league distant, they did not reach it till about five o'clock in the afternoon, being retarded by the quantity of canoes that crowded round the ships, laden with abundant supplies of the produce of the island. Several of these canoes, which were double, had a large sail, and carried between forty and fifty men each. Several women, too, appeared in the canoes, incited, perhaps, by curiosity, to visit the ships, though they were as earnest in bartering as the men, and used the paddle with equal skill and dexterity. They came to an anchor in eighteen fathoms water, the island extending from east to south-west, about three quarters of a mile distant. Thus, Captain Cook resumed the station which he had occupied when he visited Annamooka three years before.

The next day, May the 2d, during the preparations for watering, Captain Cook went ashore, in the forenoon, accompanied by Captain Clerke and others, to fix on a place for setting up the observatories, the natives having readily granted them permission. They shewed them every mark of civility, and accommodated them with a boat-house, which answered the purpose of a tent. Toobou, the chief of the island, conducted Captain Cook and Omai to his house, situated on a pleasant spot in the centre of his plantation. While they were on shore they bartered for some hogs and fruit; and, when they arrived on board, the ships were crowded with the natives. As very few of them came empty-handed, they were speedily supplied with every refreshment.

In the afternoon, Captain Cook landed again, with a party of marines, and such of the cattle as were in a weakly state were sent on shore with him. Having settled every thing to his satisfaction, he returned to the ship in the evening, leaving Mr. King in command upon the island. Taipa was now become their trusty friend, and, in order to be near their party, had a house carried a quarter of a mile, on men's shoulders, and placed by the side of the shed which the English occupied.

On the 6th of May they were visited by a chief from Tongataboo, whose name was Feenou: he was introduced by Taipa, as king of all the Friendly Isles. On his arrival, all the natives were ordered out to meet him, who saluted him by bowing their heads as low as his feet, the soles of which they touched with the palms of each hand, and afterwards with the back part. A personage received with such extraordinary marks of re-

spect, could not be supposed to be any less than a king.

In the afternoon Captain Cook went to pay a visit to this great man, having first received from him a present of two fish, brought on board by one of his attendants. As soon as the captain landed, Feenou came up to him. He was tall and thin, and appeared to be about thirty years of age; his features were more of the European cast than any they had seen here. After the first salutation, Captain Cook was informed that he was the sovereign of no less than one hundred and fifty-three islands. Soon after, their grand visitor, attended by five or six servants, accompanied them on board. The captain made them suitable presents, and entertained them in a manner which he thought would be most agreeable. Towards the evening, he also attended them on shore in his boat, into which, by order of the chief, three hogs were conveyed, as a return for the presents which were received.

On the 7th Feenou dined with Captain Cook; and also on the next day, when he was attended by Taipa, Toobou, and some other chiefs. None but Taipa, however, was permitted to sit at table with Feenou, or even to eat in his presence. The captain was highly pleased on account of this etiquette; for, before the arrival of Feenou, he had generally a larger company than he chose, his table being overflowed with visitors of both sexes. Though, at Otaheite, the females are denied the privilege of eating in company with the men, this is not the practice at the Friendly Islands.

A large junk-axe having been stolen out of the ship by one of the natives, on the first day of her arrival at Annamooka, application was made to Feenou to exert

his authority to get it restored; who gave orders for that purpose, which exacted such implicit obedience, that it was brought on board before they had finished their dinner. They had, indeed, many opportunities of remarking how expert these people were in thievery. Even some of the chiefs were not ashamed of acting in that profession. On the 9th of May, one of them was detected carrying out of the ship the bolt belonging to the spun-yard winch, which he had carefully concealed under his clothes. For this offence the captain sentenced him to receive a dozen lashes, and to be confined till he paid a hog for his liberty. Though, after this circumstance, they were troubled with no more thieves of rank, their servants or slaves were constantly employed in this dirty business; and they received a flogging with as much seeming indifference as if it had been upon the mainmast. When any of them were caught in the act of thieving, instead of interceding in their behalf, their masters would often advise the English to kill them. This being a punishment they were not fond of inflicting, they usually escaped with impunity: they were alike insensible of the shame and torture of corporeal chastisement. At length, however, Captain Clerke contrived a mode of treatment which was supposed to have some effect. Immediately upon detection he ordered their heads to be completely shaved, and thus pointed them out as objects of ridicule to their countrymen, and put the sailors upon their guard, to deprive them of future opportunities for a repetition of their thefts.

Fenou was so fond of the captain's company, that he dined on board every day, though he did not always partake of his fare. On the 10th, his servants brought

him a mess which had been dressed on shore, consisting of fish, soup, and yams; cocoa-nut liquor had been used instead of water, in which the fish had been boiled or stewed, (perhaps in a wooden vessel with hot stones) and it was carried on board on a plantain-leaf. Captain Cook tasted of the mess, and was so well pleased with it, that he afterwards ordered some fish to be dressed in the same way; though the cook succeeded tolerably well, it was much inferior to the dish he attempted to imitate.

Feenou, hearing that the captain meant to proceed to Tongataboo, earnestly entreated him to alter his plan; expressing as much aversion to it, as if, by diverting him from it, he wished to promote some particular interest of his own. He warmly recommended a group of islands called Hapaee, lying to the north-east; where, he said they could be easily and plentifully supplied with every refreshment; and even offered to attend them thither in person. In consequence of his advice, Hapaee was made choice of; and, as it had not yet been visited by any European ships, the surveying it became an object to our navigator.

On the morning of the 14th they got under sail, and left Annamooka, which is somewhat higher than the other small isles that surround it. In the centre of the island there is a salt-water lake, about a mile and a half in breadth, round which the ground rises with a gradual ascent. On the rising parts of the island, and especially towards the sea, the soil is either of a blackish loose mould or a reddish clay; but there is not a stream of fresh water to be found in any part of it. The land, in general, is well cultivated.

All the circumjacent rocks and stones are of coral, ex-

cept in one place, to the right of the sandy beach, where there is a rock of about twenty-five feet in height, of a calcareous stone, and of a yellowish colour; but, even here, some large pieces are to be seen of the same coral rock as that which composes the shore.

In the direct tract to Hapaee, to the N. and N. E. of Annamooka, a great number of small isles are seen. Amidst the rocks and shoals adjoining to this group, the captains were doubtful whether there was a free passage for ships of such magnitude as theirs, though the natives sailed through the intervals in their canoes; therefore, when they weighed anchor from Annamooka, they steered to go to the westward of the above islands, and N. N. W. towards Kao and Toofoa, two islands remarkable for their great height and the most westerly of those in sight. Feenou, with his attendants, remained in the Resolution till about noon, and then entered the large sailing canoe which had brought them from Tongataboo, and stood in amongst the cluster of islands of which they were now abreast. They are scattered at unequal distances, and most of them are as high as Annamooka. Some of them are two or three miles in length, and others only half a mile. Many of them have steep rocky shores, like Annamooka; some have reddish cliffs, and others have sandy beaches, extending almost their whole length. In general, they are entirely clothed with trees, among which are many cocoa-palms, each having the appearance of a beautiful garden placed in the sea. In the afternoon, about four o'clock, they steered to the north, leaving Toofoa and Kao on their larboard.

Early on the 15th they were not far from Kao, which is a large rock of a conic figure; they steered to the passage between Footooa and Hataiva, with a gentle breeze

at S. E. About ten o'clock Feenou came on board, and continued with them all day. He brought with him a quantity of fruit and two hogs; and, in the course of the day, several canoes came to barter quantities of the former article, which was now very acceptable. After having passed Footooha, they met with a reef of rocks; and, there being but little wind, it was attended with some difficulty to keep clear of them.

On the 16th, they steered with a gentle breeze at S. E. for Hapaee, which was now in sight; and perceived it to be low land, from the trees only appearing above the water. At nine o'clock they saw it plainly, forming three islands, nearly equal in size; and, soon after, a fourth appeared to the southward of these, as large as any of the others. Each of these islands appeared to be of a similar height and appearance, and about six or seven miles in length. The most northern of them is called Haanno, the next Foa, the third Lefooga, and the fourth Hoolaiva; but they are all four included under the general name of Hapaee. The next day, being then close in with Foa, they perceived it was joined to Haanno, by a reef running from one island to the other, even with the surface of the sea. Captain Cook dispatched a boat to look for anchorage; and a proper place was found, abreast of a reef which joins Lefooga to Foa, having twenty-four fathoms depth of water.

As soon as they had anchored, they were surrounded by a multitude of canoes, and both ships were presently filled with the natives. They brought with them hogs, fowls, fruit, and roots, which they exchanged for cloth, knives, beads, nails, and hatchets. Feenou and Omai now accompanied Captain Cook on shore, and the chief conducted the captain to a hut, situated close to the sea-

beach, which was brought thither but a few minutes before for his reception. In this Feenou, Omai, and Captain Cook, were seated. The other chiefs, and the multitude, appeared fronting them on the outside; and they also seated themselves. Captain Cook being asked how long he intended to stay, answered five days. Taipa was, therefore, ordered to sit by him, and declare this to the people. He then harangued them in words nearly to the following purport, (as they afterwards were informed by Omai) exhorting both old and young to look upon Captain Cook as a friend, who meant to continue with them a few days; and that, during his stay among them, they would not steal any thing from him, or offend him in any other manner. He informed them, that it was expected they should bring hogs, fowls, fruit, &c. to the ships; for which they would receive in exchange such articles as he enumerated. Soon after Taipa had delivered his address to the assembly, Feenou left them; on which Captain Cook was informed by Taipa that it was necessary he should make a present to Earoupa, the chief of the island. The captain being not unprepared for this, gave him such articles as far exceeded his expectation. This liberality created similar demands from two chiefs of other isles who were present, and even from Taipa himself. Soon after he had made the last of these presents, Feenou returned, and expressed his displeasure with Taipa for suffering the captain to be so lavish of his favours.

Feenou now resumed his seat, ordering Earoupa to sit by him, and harangue the people as Taipa had done, which he did nearly to the same purpose. These ceremonies over, the chief, at the captain's request, conducted him to three stagnant pools of what he called fresh

water; in one of which the water was indeed tolerable, and the situation convenient for filling their casks. On his return to his former station, he found a baked hog, and some yams, smoking hot, ready to be conveyed on board for his dinner. He invited Feenou and his friends to partake of the repast, and they embarked for the ship, though none but himself sat down with them at table. Dinner being over, the captain conducted them on shore, and, before he returned, received, as a present from the chief, a fine large turtle and a quantity of yams. They had a plentiful supply of provisions, for, in the course of the day, they got, by bartering with the natives, about twenty small hogs, together with a large quantity of fruit and roots.

Early the next morning, Feenou and Omai, who now slept on shore with the chief, came on board to request Captain Cook's presence upon the island. He accompanied them, and, upon landing, was conducted to the place where he had been seated the preceding day, and where he beheld a large concourse of people already assembled. Though he imagined that something extraordinary was in agitation, yet he could not conjecture what, nor could Omai give him any information. Soon after, about a hundred of the natives appeared, and advanced, laden with yams, plantains, bread fruit, cocoa-nuts, and sugar-canes; their burdens were deposited on their left. A number of others arrived soon after, bearing the same kind of articles, which were collected into two piles on the right side. To these were fastened two pigs, and half a dozen fowls; and to those upon the left six pigs and two turtles. Earoupa seated himself before the articles on the left side, and another chief before those upon the right.

When this munificent collection of provisions was placed in order, and advantageously disposed, the bearers of it joined the multitude, who formed a circle round the whole. Immediately after, a number of men, armed with clubs, entered this circle or area; where they paraded about for a few minutes, and then one half of them retired to one side, and the other half to the other side, seating themselves before the spectators. Presently after, they successively entertained their guests with single combats; one champion from one side challenging those of the other side, partly by words, but more by expressive gestures, to send one of their party to oppose him. The challenge was, in general, accepted; the two combatants placed themselves in proper attitudes, and the engagement began, which continued till one of them yielded, or till their weapons were broken. At the conclusion of each combat, the victor squatted himself down before the chief, then immediately rose up and retired. Some old men, who seemed to preside as judges, gave their plaudit in a very few words; and the multitude, especially those on the side of the conqueror, celebrated the glory he had acquired in two or three loud huzzas. This entertainment was sometimes suspended for a short space, and the intervals of time were filled up with wrestling and boxing-matches. The first were performed in the method practised at Otaheite, and the second differed very little from the English manner. A couple of stout wenches next stepped forth, and, without ceremony, began boxing with as much dexterity as the men. This contest, however, was but of short duration, for, in the space of half a minute, one of them gave it up. The victorious heroine was applauded by the spectators, in the same manner as the successful combatants

of the other sex. Though our navigators expressed some disapprobation at this part of the entertainment, it did not hinder two other females from entering the lists; who seemed to be spirited girls, and if two old women had not interposed to part them, would probably have given each other a good drubbing. At least three thousand spectators were present when these combats were exhibited, and every thing was conducted with the greatest good humour on all sides.

As soon as the diversions were finished, the chief informed Captain Cook that the provisions on their right-hand were a present to Omai; and that those on their left (making about two thirds of the whole quantity) were intended for him, and that he might suit his own convenience in taking them on board. Four boats were loaded with the munificence of Feenou, whose favours far exceeded any that Captain Cook had ever received from the sovereigns of any of the islands which he had visited in the Pacific Ocean. He, therefore, embraced the first opportunity of convincing Feenou that he was not insensible of his liberality, by bestowing upon him such commodities as he supposed were most valuable in his estimation. Feenou was so highly pleased with the return that was made him, that he left the captain still indebted to him, by sending him two large hogs, some yams, and a considerable quantity of cloth.

As Feenou had expressed a desire to see the marines perform their exercise, Captain Cook ordered them all ashore on the 20th of May. After they had gone through various evolutions, and fired several vollies, which seemed to give pleasure to their numerous spectators, the chief, in his turn, entertained the English with an exhi-

bition, which was performed with an exactness and dexterity far surpassing what they had seen of their military manœuvres. It was a kind of dance, performed by men, in which one hundred and five persons were engaged; each having an instrument in his hand, resembling a paddle, two feet and a half long, with a thin blade, and a small handle. With these instruments various flourishes were made, each of which was accompanied with a different movement, or a different attitude of the body. At first, the dancers ranged themselves in three lines, and so changed their stations by different evolutions, that those who had been in the rear came into the front. At one part of the performance they extended themselves in one line; afterwards they formed themselves into a semi circle; and then into two square columns. During the last movement, one of them came forward, and performed an antic dance before Captain Cook, with which the entertainment ended.

The music that accompanied the dances was produced by two drums, or rather hollow logs of wood, from which they forced some varied notes, by beating on them with two sticks. The dancers, however, did not appear to be much assisted or directed by these sounds; but by a chorus of vocal music, in which all the performers joined. Their song was rather melodious, and their corresponding motions were so skilfully executed, that the whole body of dancers appeared as one regular machine. Such a performance would have been applauded even on an European theatre. It far exceeded any attempt that was hitherto made to entertain them; indeed, the natives esteemed none of the English musical instruments, except the drum, and even thought that in-

ferior to their own. They held the French horns in the highest contempt.

To give them a more favourable opinion of the amusements and superior attainments of the English, Captain Cook ordered some fire-works to be prepared; and, after it was dark, exhibited them in the presence of Feenou and a vast multitude of people. They were highly entertained with the performance in general; particularly with the water and sky-rockets, which astonished them beyond all conception.

This, however, served only as an additional stimulus to urge the natives to proceed to fresh exertions of their singular dexterity. As soon as the fireworks were ended, a succession of dances began. A band of music, or chorus, consisting of eighteen men, seated themselves before the gentlemen, in the centre of a circle formed by the numerous spectators. About four or five of the performers had each pieces of large bamboo, from three to six feet in length, each played on by one man, who held it almost vertically; the upper end of which was open, but the other closed by one of the joints. They kept constantly striking the ground, though slowly, with the close end, and thus produced variety of notes, according to the different lengths of the instrument, but all were of the bass or hollow kind; which was counteracted by a person who struck nimbly a piece of the same substance, split, and lying upon the ground; furnishing a note as acute as the others were grave and solemn. The whole of the band (including those who performed upon the bamboos) sang a slow soft air, which so finely tempered the harsher notes of the instruments, that the most perfect judge of the modulation of sweet sounds could not avoid confessing the vast power, and pleasing

effect, of this simple harmony. Soon after this concert was finished, twenty women entered the circle, whose heads were adorned with garlands of crimson flowers; and many of their persons were decorated with leaves of trees, curiously scolloped, and ornamented at the edges. They encircled those of the chorus, with their faces towards them, and began by singing a soft air, to which responses were made by the chorus; and those were alternately repeated. The women accompanied their song with many graceful motions of their hands, and continually advanced and retreated with one foot, while the other remained fixed. After this, they turned their faces to the assembly, and having sung for some time, retreated slowly in a body, and placed themselves opposite the hut, where the principal spectators sat. One of them next advanced from each side, passing each other in the front, and progressively moving till they came to the rest; on which two advanced from each side, two of whom returned, but the other two remained; and to these, from each side, came one by intervals, till they all had once more formed a circle about the chorus. Dancing to a quicker measure now succeeded, in which the performers made a kind of half-turn by leaping; then clapping their hands, and snapping their fingers, repeated some words in unison with the chorus. As they proceeded in the dance, the rapidity of their music increased; their gestures and attitudes were varied with wonderful dexterity.

This female ballet was succeeded by one performed by fifteen men; and, though some of them were old, time seemed to have robbed them of but little of their agility. They were disposed in a sort of circle, divided at the front. Sometimes they sang slowly in concert with the

chorus, making several graceful motions with their hands, but differing from those of the women; at the same time inclining the body alternately to either side, by raising one leg outward, and resting on the other; the arm of the same side being also stretched upward. Then they recited sentences, which were answered by the chorus; and occasionally increased the measure of the dance, by clapping the hands, and quickening the motions of the feet. This dance being ended, after a considerable interval, twelve other men advanced placing themselves in double rows, fronting each other. On one side was stationed a kind of prompter, who repeated several sentences, to which responses were made by the performers and the chorus. They sung and danced slowly; and gradually grew quicker, like those whom they had succeeded.

The next who exhibited themselves were nine women, who sat down opposite the hut where the chief had placed himself. A man immediately rose, and gave the first of these women a blow on the back with both his fists joined. He treated the second and third in the same manner; but when he came to the fourth, he struck her upon the breast. Upon seeing this, a person instantly rising up from among the croud, knocked him down with a blow on the head, and he was quietly carried away. But this did not excuse the other five women from so extraordinary a discipline; for they were treated in the same manner by a person who succeeded him. When these nine women danced, their performance was twice disapproved of, and they were obliged to repeat it again. There was no great difference between this dance and that of the first women. Soon after, a person unexpectedly entered, making some

ludicrous remarks on the fire-works that had been exhibited, which extorted a burst of laughter from the crowd. There was then a dance by the attendants of Feenou, who formed a double circle of twenty-four each round the chorus, and joined in a gentle soothing song, accompanied with motions of the head and hands. They also began with slow movements, which gradually became more and more rapid.

The festivity of this memorable night concluded with a dance, in which the principal people assisted. In many respects it resembled the preceding ones, but they increased their motions to a prodigious quickness, shaking their heads from shoulder to shoulder, insomuch that they appeared in danger of dislocating their necks. A person, on one side, repeated something in a truly musical recitative; he was answered by another; and this was repeated several times by the whole body on each side; and they finished by singing and dancing, as they had begun. The theatre for these performances was an open space among the trees, bordering on the sea, with lights, placed at small intervals, round the inside of the circle. About five thousand persons, or upwards, were supposed to be present.

The next day, (May the 21st) Captain Cook made an excursion into the island of Lefooga, on foot, which he found to be, in some respects, superior to Annamooka, the plantations being not only more numerous, but also more extensive. Many of the plantations are inclosed in such a manner, that the fences, running parallel to each other, form spacious public roads. Large spots, covered with the paper mulberry-tree, were observed; and the plantations, in general, were abundantly stocked with such plants and fruit trees as the island produces.

To these the commodore made some addition, by sowing the seeds of melons, pumpkins, Indian corn, &c. At one place was a house, about four times as large as the ordinary ones, with an extensive area of grass before it, to which the people probably resort on some public occasions. Near the landing-place was a mount two or three feet high, on which stood four or five little huts, wherein the bodies of some persons of distinction had been interred. The island is but seven miles in length; and it breadth, in some places, not above three miles. The east-side has a reef, projecting considerably, against which the sea breaks with great violence.

When the captain returned from his excursion, and went on board, he found a large sailing canoe fastened to the stern of the Resolution. In this canoe was Latooliboula, whom he had seen, during his last voyage, at Tongataboo, and who was then supposed by him to be the king of that island. He could not be prevailed upon to come on board, but continued sitting in his canoe with an air of uncommon gravity. The islanders called him Areekee, (which signifies king) a title which they had not heard any of them give to Fenou, however extensive his authority over them had appeared to be. Latooliboula remained under the stern till the evening, and then departed. Feenou was on board the Resolution at that time; but neither of these chiefs took the smallest notice of the other.

On the 23d, as they were preparing to leave the island, Feenou, and his prime-minister Taipa, came alongside in a canoe, and informed them that they were going to Vavaoo, an island situate, as they said, about two days' sail to the northward of Hapaee. They assured the captain that the object of their voyage was to procure

for him on additional supply of hogs, besides some red-feathered caps for Omai to carry with him to Otaheite; and desired him not to sail till their return, which would be in four or five days; after which Feenou would accompany them to Tongataboo. Captain Cook consented to wait the return of this chief, who immediately set out for Vavaoo.

On the 25th our navigator went into a house where a woman was dressing the eyes of a child who seemed blind. The instruments used by this female oculist were two slender wooden probes, with which she brushed the eyes so as to make them bleed. In the same house he found another woman shaving a child's head with a shark's tooth, stuck into the end of a stick: she first wetted the hair with a rag dipped in water, and then making use of her instrument, took off the hair as close as if a razor had been employed; nor did the operation seem to give the child any pain. Captain Cook soon after tried upon himself one of these remarkable instruments, which he found to be an excellent substitute. The natives of these islands, however, have a different method of shaving their beards, which operation they perform with two shells; one of which they place under a part of the beard, and with the other, applied above, they scrape off that part: in this manner they can shave very close, though the process is rather tedious. There are among them some men who seem to profess this trade; for it was as common for the sailors to go ashore to have their beards scraped off after the mode of Hapaee, as it was for the chiefs to come on board to be shaved by English barbers.

Finding that little or nothing of what the island produced was now brought to the ships, the captain deter-

mined to change his station, and to wait Feenou's return in some other anchoring-place, where they might still meet with refreshments. On the 26th they accordingly made sail to the southward, along the reef of the island, and having passed several shoals, hauled into a bay that lies between the north end of Hoolaiva, and the south of Lefooga, and there anchored. Captain Cook, accompanied by Lieutenant Gore, now landed on the southern part of Lefooga, to look for fresh water and examine the country. On the west side of the island, they observed an artificial mount of considerable antiquity, about 40 feet high, and measuring 50 feet in the diameter of its summit. At the bottom of this mount was a stone fourteen feet high, two and a half thick, and four broad, hewn out of coral-rock; and they were informed by the islanders, that not more than half its length was seen above-ground. They called it Tangata Areekee, (i. e. man-king) and said it had been set up, and the mount raised, in memory of one of their kings.

Lefooga and Hoolaiva are separated from each other by a reef of coral-rocks, dry at low water. Some of the gentlemen, who landed in the last-mentioned island, found not the smallest mark of cultivation or habitation upon it, except a single hut, in which a man employed to catch fish and turtle resided. Notwithstanding, an artificial mount has been raised upon it, equal in height to some of the surrounding trees.

Towards noon on the 27th a large sailing canoe came under their stern, in which was a person named Poulaho, or Futtafaihe, or both; who was said, by the natives then on board, to be king of Tongataboo, Annamooka, Hapaee, and all the neighbouring islands. They were surprised to find a stranger dignified with this title,

which they had been taught to believe appertained to another; however, they were now told that Feenou was not the king, but a subordinate chief. Poulaho was accordingly invited by the captain on board, where he was not an unwelcome guest, as he brought with him two fat hogs by way of present. This great personage, though not very tall, was extremely unwieldy, and almost shapeless with corpulence. He appeared to be about forty; his hair was straight, and his features considerably different from those of the majority of his people. He was, however, a sedate, sensible man. He viewed the ship, and the various new objects, with particular attention; and asked many pertinent questions. When he had gratified his curiosity in looking at the cattle, and other novelties, he was requested to walk down into the cabin; to which some of his retinue objected, saying, that if he should go down thither, it would doubtless happen that people would walk over his head; a circumstance that could not be permitted. Though the captain offered to obviate this objection, by ordering that no one should presume to walk over the cabin, Poulaho waved all ceremony, and went down without any previous stipulation. He now sat down to dinner with them, but eat and drank very little; and afterwards desired the captain to accompany him on shore. Omai was asked to be one of the party; but he was too faithfully attached to Feenou, to show much respect to his competitor, and therefore declined the invitation. Captain Cook attended the chief in his own boat, having first made him such presents as exceeded his expectations; in return for which Poulaho ordered two more hogs to be sent on board. The chief was then carried out of the boat by his own subjects, on a board resem-

The Body of a Chief as preserved after Death, in Otaheite.

bling a hand-barrow; and immediately seated himself in a small house near the shore. He placed the captain at his side; and his attendants formed a semi-circle before them, on the outside of the house. An old woman sat close to the chief, with a kind of fan in her hand, to prevent his being incommoded by the flies. The various articles which his people had procured by trading on board the ships, being now displayed before him, he attentively looked over them all, inquired what they had given in exchange, and, at length, ordered every thing to be returned to the respective owners, except a glass-bowl, which he reserved for himself. His attendants, just before they left him, paid him obeisance by bowing their heads down to the sole of his foot, and touching it with the upper and under-side of the fingers of each hand. Captain Cook was charmed with the decorum that was maintained on this occasion, having scarcely seen the like any where, even among the most civilized nations.

Early the next morning, Poulaho came on board, bringing a red-feathered cap as a present to Captain Cook. These caps are composed of the tail feathers of the tropic bird, intermixed with the red feathers of the paroquet; and are made in such manner as to tie on the forehead, without any crown, and have the form of a semi-circle whose radius is eighteen or twenty inches. The chief left the ship in the evening; but his brother, whose name also was Futtafaihe, and some of his attendants, remained all night on board.

On the 29th, at day-break, they weighed with a fine breeze at E. N. E. and made sail to the westward, followed by several sailing canoes, in one of which was Poulaho the king, who, getting on board the Resolution,

enquired for his brother, and the others who had continued on board. They now found that they had staid without his permission, for he gave them such a reprimand as brought tears from their eyes: however, he was soon reconciled to their making a longer stay; for, on his departure from the ship, he left his brother and five attendants on board. They were also honoured with the company of a chief named Toboueitoa, just then arrived from Tongataboo; who, as soon as he came, sent away his canoe, declaring, that he and five others who came with him, would sleep on board; so that Captain Cook had his cabin filled with visitors. This inconvenience, however, he willingly endured, as they brought with them plenty of provisions as presents, for which they met with suitable returns.

On the 31st the wind blew fresh, with squalls and rain; and, during the night, the Resolution, by a small change of the wind, fetching too far to the windward, was very near running full upon a low sandy isle named Pooto Pootooa, encompassed with breakers. The men having fortunately been just ordered upon deck, to put the ship about, and most of them being at their respective stations, the necessary movements were performed with judgment and alertness; and this alone preserved them from destruction. The Discovery, being astern, incurred no danger. This narrow escape so alarmed the natives who were on board, that they were eagerly desirous of getting ashore: accordingly, on the return of day-light, a boat was hoisted out, and the officer who commanded her was ordered, after landing them at Kotoo, to sound for anchorage along the reef that projects from that island. During the absence of the boat, they endeavoured to turn the ships through the channel be-

tween the reef of Kotoo and the sandy isle. Having met with a convenient situation, they remained here till the 4th of June, being frequently visited by the king, by Toboueitoa, and others who came from the neighbouring islands to traffic with them. The captain went on shore soon after, to take a survey of it. This island, on account of the coral reefs that environ it, is scarcely accessible by boats. Its north-west end is low; but it rises suddenly in the middle, and terminates at the south-east end in reddish clayey cliffs. It produces the same fruits and roots with the adjacent islands, is about two miles in length, and is tolerably cultivated, though thinly inhabited.

Having weighed with a fresh gale at E. S. E. they made sail towards Annamooka, where they anchored the next morning, nearly in the same station which they had so lately occupied. Captain Cook soon after went on shore, and found the islanders very busy in their plantations, digging up yams for traffic. In the course of the day about two hundred of them assembled on the beach, and traded with great eagerness. The yams were now in the highest perfection; and they obtained a good quantity of them in exchange for iron.

On the 6th, about noon, Feenou arrived from Vavoo, and informed them that several canoes, laden with hogs and other provisions, had sailed with him for that island, but had been lost in the late tempestuous weather, and every person on board of them had perished. This melancholy tale did not gain much credit with our navigators, who were by this time sufficiently acquainted with the character of the relater. The next morning Poulaho, and some other chiefs, arrived; at which time Captain Cook happened to be ashore with Feenou, who now

appeared to be sensible of the impropriety of his conduct, in arrogating a character to which he had no just claim; for he not only acknowledged Foulaho as sovereign of Tongataboo and the adjacent isles, but affected to insist much on it. The captain left him, and went to pay a visit to the real king, whom he found sitting with a few of the natives before him; but great numbers hastening to pay their respects to him, the circle increased very fast. When Feenou approached, he placed himself among the rest that sat before Poulaho, as attendants on his majesty. He at first seemed to be somewhat confused and abashed; but soon recovered from his agitation. Some conversation passed between these two chiefs, who went on board with the captain to dinner; but only Poulaho sat at table. Feenou, after having made his obeisance in the usual mode, by saluting the foot of his sovereign with his head and hands, retired from the cabin, and it now appeared that he could neither eat nor drink in the king's presence.

On the 8th they weighed anchor and steered for Tongataboo, with a gentle breeze at N. E. They were accompanied by fourteen or fifteen sailing vessels belonging to the islanders, every one of which outran the ships. The royal canoe was distinguished from the rest by a small bundle of grass, of a red colour, fastened to the end of a pole, and fixed in the stern of the canoe in the same manner as our ensign staffs. At five in the afternoon they descried two small islands, at the distance of four leagues to the westward; one was called Hoonga Hapaee, and the other Hoodga Tonga.

On the 9th they saw several little islands, beyond which Eooa and Tongataboo appeared. Steering, by the direction of their pilots, for the widest space between

those isles, they were insensibly drawn upon a large flat, on which lay innumerable rocks of coral below the surface of the sea. Notwithstanding their utmost care and attention to avoid these rocks, they were unable to prevent the ship from striking on one of them: nor did the Discovery, though behind, keep clear of them. It fortunately happened that neither of the ships sustained any damage. The moment they found a place where they could anchor with any degree of safety, they came to; and soon after several of the natives of Tongataboo came to them in their canoes; and they, as well as their pilots, assured them that they should meet with deep water further in, free from rocks. They therefore weighed, and arrived at their intended station about two o'clock in the afternoon of the 10th. It was a very convenient place, formed by the shore of Tongataboo on the S. E., and two little isles on the E. and N. E.

Captain Cook now went on shore, accompanied by some of the officers and Omai. They found the king waiting for them on the beach, who conducted them to a small neat house near the woods, with an extensive area before it, and told the captain that it was at his service during his continuance in the island. Before they had been long in the house a large circle of the natives assembled before them, and seated themselves upon the area. A root of the kava plant being brought to the king, he commanded it to be split into pieces, and distributed to several people of both sexes, who began to chew it, and soon prepared a bowl of their favourite liquor. Meanwhile a baked hog, and a quantity of baked yams, were produced, and divided into ten portions. These shares were given to some of those who were present, except one, which remained undisposed of, and

which was probably reserved for the king himself. The liquor was next served out; and the first cup being brought up to his majesty, he ordered it to be given to a person who sat near him: the second was also brought to him, which he kept: the third was given to Captain Cook; but, their mode of preparing the liquor having given him a distaste for it, it was brought to Omai. The remainder of it was given to different people; and one of the cups being carried to Poulaho's brother, he retired with this, and with his share of the provisions. Some others also withdrew from the circle with their portions, because they could neither eat nor drink in his majesty's presence: but there were others of an inferior rank, of both sexes, who both eat and drank before him. Soon afterwards, the greater part of them went away, carrying with them what they had not eaten of their share of the feast. It is worthy of remark, that the servants who distributed the meat and the kava, delivered it sitting, not only to the king, but to the others.

Captain Cook, before he returned on board, went in search of a watering-place, and was conducted to some ponds, in one of which the water was tolerable, but it was at some distance inland. Being informed that the small island of Pangimodoo, near which the ships were stationed, could better supply this important article, he went over to it the next morning, and found there a pool containing fresher water than any he had met with amongst these islands. This pool being extremely dirty, he caused it to be cleaned; and here it was that they filled their water-casks. The same morning a tent was pitched near the house which the king had assigned for their use. The horses, cattle, and sheep, were then landed, and a party of marines stationed there as a guard.

The observatory was set up at a considerable distance from the other tent; and Mr. King took up his residence on shore, to direct the observations, and superintend all other necessary business. A party was occupied in cutting wood for fuel, and planks for the ships; and the gunners were appointed to conduct the traffic with the inhabitants, who flocked from all parts of the island with hogs, yams, cocoa-nuts, and other articles, insomuch that their land-station resembled a fair, and both ships were remarkably crowded with visitants. As Feenou now resided in their neighbourhood, they had daily proofs of his opulence and generosity, by the continuance of his valuable donations. Poulaho was equally attentive to them in this respect, as scarcely a day passed without his favouring them with considerable presents.

They were now informed that there was another person, of the name of Mareewagee, of very high rank in the island, but that, being advanced in years, he lived in retirement, and therefore was not inclined to pay them a visit. This intelligence exciting the curiosity of Captain Cook, he signified to Poulaho his intention of waiting upon this great man; and the king having agreed to accompany him, they set out the next morning in the pinnace, Captain Clerke joining them in one of his own boats. Having landed amidst a great concourse of people, who received them with shouts and acclamations, Poulaho took the gentlemen into a small inclosure, and changed the piece of cloth he wore for a new piece, very neatly folded: an old woman assisted him in dressing, and put a large mat over his cloth. Being now asked where Mareewagee was, he said, to the great

surprize of the gentlemen, that he was gone down to the ships.

This place was a very pleasant village, delightfully situated on the banks of the bay or inlet, where most of the principal persons on the island reside. Each of these has his house in the midst of a small plantation, with a kind of out-houses, and offices for servants. These plantations are neatly fenced round, and, in general, have only one entrance, which is by a door fastened on the inside with a prop of wood. Between each plantation there are public roads and narrow lanes.

On the 13th, about twelve o'clock, Mareewagee came within a small distance of their post on shore, attended by a great number of people of all ranks. In the course of the afternoon, the two captains and other gentlemen, accompanied by Feenou, went ashore to visit him. They found a person sitting under a tree, with a piece of cloth, about forty yards long, spread before him, round which numbers of people were seated. They imagined that this was the great personage, but were undeceived by Feenou, who informed them that another, who was sitting on a piece of mat, was Mareewagee. To him they were introduced by Feenou; and he received them very graciously, and desired them to sit down by him. The chief who sat under the tree was named Toobou. Both he and Mareewagee were venerable in their appearance. The latter was slender in his person, and seemed to be near seventy years of age. Toobou was somewhat corpulent, and almost blind from a disorder in his eyes: he was younger than Mareewagee. Captain Cook not expecting on this occasion to

meet with two chiefs, had brought on shore a present for one only; this, therefore, he was obliged to divide between them; but, as it happened to be considerable, both of them appeared to be satisfied. The English now entertained them about an hour with the performance of two French horns and a drum; but the firing off a pistol that Captain Clerke had in his pocket seemed to please them most. Before the gentlemen took their leave of the two chiefs, the large piece of cloth was rolled up and presented to Captain Cook, together with a few cocoa-nuts.

Towards noon the next day Poulaho came on board, bringing with him his son, who was about twelve years of age. He dined with Captain Cook; but the son, though present, was not permitted to sit down with him. The captain found it very convenient to have him for his guest; for, whenever he was present, (which was frequently the case) every other native was excluded from the table, and few of them would continue in the cabin. The king was soon reconciled to their cookery, and was fond of their wine. He now resided near their tent, where he this evening entertained their people with a dance, in which he himself, though so corpulent and unwieldy, engaged.

On the 15th Captain Cook and Omai waited on Touboo, whom they found sitting, like one of the ancient patriarchs, under the shade of a tree, with a large piece of cloth, the manufacture of the island, spread out before him. He desired them to place themselves by him; after which, he told Omai that the cloth, with some cocoa-nuts and red feathers, constituted his present to Captain Cook. Omai, being sent for by Poulaho, now left the captain, who was informed by Feenou that

young Fattafaihe, the king's son, desired to see him. He immediately obeyed the summons, and found the young prince and Omai seated under a canopy of fine cloth, with a piece of a coarser kind, seventy-six yards long, and seven and a half broad, spread before them and under them. On one side was a quantity of cocoa-nuts; and on the other a large boar. A multitude of people sat round the cloth; and among them was Mareewagee, with other persons of rank. The captain was requested to seat himself by the prince; and then Omai informed him, that he had been instructed by Poulaho to tell him, that as his majesty and the captain were friends, he hoped that his son Fattafaihe might be comprehended in this friendship; and that the captain, as a testimony of his consent, would accept of the prince's present. Captain Cook readily agreed to the proposal, and invited them all to dine with him on board. Accordingly, the young prince, Toobou, Mareewagee, three or four subordinate chiefs, and two old ladies of high rank, accompanied Captain Cook to the ship. Mareewagee was dressed in a new piece of cloth, with six patches of red feathers on the skirts of it. This dress was probably made on purpose for this visit; for, as soon as he arrived on board, he put it off, and presented it to Captain Cook. When dinner was served up, not one of them would even sit down to eat a morsel of any thing, as they were all taboo, they said; which word, though it has a very comprehensive meaning, generally signifies that a thing is prohibited. Having made presents to them all, and gratified their curiosity by showing them every part of the ship, the captain conducted them ashore. When the boat had reached the land, Feenou and several others immediately stepped out; and the

young prince following them, was called back by Mareewagee, who now paid the heir-apparent the same obeisance which the king was accustomed to receive. By this time Captain Cook had gained some certain information with regard to the relative situation of several of the chiefs. He now knew that old Toobou and Mareewagee were brothers. Feenou was one of the sons of Mareewagee, and Toobouеitoa was another.

Captain Cook, on his landing, found Poulaho in the house adjoining to their tent, who immediately made him a present of a quantity of yams and a hog. Towards evening a number of islanders came, and having seated themselves in a circle, sang in concert with the music of bamboo-drums, which were placed in the centre. They sang three songs while the captain staid; and the entertainment lasted, after he left them, till ten o'clock. They burned the leaves of the wharra-palm for a light.

Early on the 16th Captain Cook and Mr. Gore took a walk into the country; in the course of which they met with an opportunity of seeing the whole process of making cloth, the principal manufacture of these islands, as well as of many others in the South-Sea. The manufacturers, who are of the female sex, take the slender stalks or trunks of the paper-mulberry, which rarely grows more than seven feet in height, and about the thickness of four fingers. From these they strip the bark, and scrape off the exterior rind: after which the bark is rolled up, and macerated for some time in water; it is then beaten with a square instrument of wood, full of coarse grooves, but sometimes with a plain one. The operation is often repeated by another person; or the bark is folded several times, and beat longer, which

is probably intended to close rather than divide its texture. It is then spread out to dry; the pieces being from four to six or seven feet in length, and about half as broad. These pieces are joined by smearing part of them with the glutinous juice of a berry called tooo; and, after being thus lengthened, they are placed over a large piece of wood, with a sort of stamp, composed of a fibrous substance, laid beneath them. The manufacturers then take a bit of cloth, and having dipped it in a juice expressed from the bark of a tree called kokka, rub it briskly over the piece that is making. This leaves upon the surface a dry gloss, and a dull brown colour; and the stamp makes at the same time a slight impression. Thus they proceed, joining and staining by degrees, till a piece of cloth, of the requisite length and breadth, is produced. They generally leave a border, about a foot broad, at the sides, and rather longer at the ends, unstained. If any parts of the original pieces have holes, or are too thin, they glue spare bits upon them, till their thickness equals that of the rest. Whenever they are desirous of producing a black colour, they mix the juice of the kokka with the soot produced from an oily nut called dooedooe. They assert that the black cloth, which is usually most glazed, makes a cold dress; but the other a warm one.

The following day was fixed upon by Mareewagee for giving a grand haiva, or entertainment, at which the gentlemen were all invited to attend. Before the temporary hut of this chief, a large space had been cleared for that purpose. In the morning, vast numbers of the natives came in from the country, every one of whom bore on his shoulder a long pole, at each end of which a yam was suspended. These poles and yams being de-

young Toobou at their head, who was splendidly ornamented with a kind of garment covered with red feathers. These persons danced, sung, and twirled the pagge, so as to meet with the continual applauses of the spectators, who were particularly pleased with a motion in which they held the face aside, as if ashamed, with the pagge before it. The hindmost rank closed before the front one, which soon after resumed its place, as in the first and second dances: then beginning again, they formed a triple row, divided, retreated to each end of the area, and left the ground in a great measure clear. Two men rushing in at that instant, began to exercise the clubs which they make use of in battle. They first twirled them in their hands, and made circular strokes before them with great quickness, managing with such skill, that, though they stood close to each other, they never interfered. They shifted the clubs with uncommon dexterity from one hand to the other; and, after some time, kneeled down, and made various motions, tossing up their clubs in the air, and catching them as they fell. When they retired, a man, armed with a spear, rushed in, and put himself in a menacing attitude, as if he intended to strike with his weapon at one of the people in the croud; at the same time bending the knee a little, and trembling as it were with fury. He continued in this position near a minute, and then moved to the other side, where, having stood in the same posture, he hastily retreated from the area. During all this time the dancers, who had divided themselves into two parties, continued to repeat something slowly; and they now came forward and joined again, concluding the dance with general applause.

In the fourth and last dance there were forty men as

a chorus, with two drums. The performers were sixty men, arranged in three rows, having twenty-four in front. Before they commenced, there was a preliminary harangue, in which the whole number made responses to an individual speaker. They recited sentences alternately with the chorus, and made with the pagge many quick motions. These amusements continued from eleven o'clock till near three. The number of islanders who attended as spectators, together with those who were round the trading-place at the tent, or straggling about, amounted to at least ten thousand, all within the compass of a quarter of a mile.

In the evening they were entertained with the bomai, or night dances, on a large area before the temporary dwelling-place of Feenou. They continued three hours; during which time, about twelve of them were performed, nearly in the same manner as those at Hapaee. The music was once changed in the course of the evening; and, in one of the dances, Feenou himself appeared at the head of fifty men: he was well dressed in linen, and some small pictures were hung round his neck.

On the 18th, an islander got out of a canoe into the Resolution, and stole a pewter bason; but being detected, he was pursued, and brought alongside the ship. Upon this occasion, three old women in the canoe made loud lamentations over the prisoner, beating their faces and breasts with the palms of their hands in a very violent manner, but without shedding a tear.

The same day Captain Cook bestowed some presents on Mareewagee, in return for those which had been received from that chief the preceding day; and as the

entertainments then exhibited called upon them to make some exhibition in return, he ordered all the marines to go through their exercise, on the spot where the late dances had been performed; and, in the evening, some fire-works were also played off at the same place. The king, the principal chiefs, and a vast multitude of people, were present. The platoon-firing seemed to please them; but, when they beheld the water-rockets, they were filled with astonishment and admiration.

While the natives were in expectation of this evening exhibition, they engaged, for the greatest part of the afternoon, in wrestling and boxing. When a person is desirous of wrestling, he gives a challenge by crossing the ground in a kind of measured pace, and clapping smartly on the elbow-joint of one arm, which is bent, and sends forth a hollow sound. If no opponent steps forth, he returns and sits down; but if an antagonist appears, they meet with marks of the greatest good-nature, generally smiling, and deliberately adjusting the piece of cloth that is fastened round the waist. They then lay hold of each other by this cloth, and he who succeeds in drawing his opponent to him, instantly endeavours to lift him upon his breast, and throw him on his back; and if he can turn round with him in that position two or three times, before he throws him, he meets with great applause for his dexterity. If they are more equally matched, they quickly close, and attempt to throw each other by entwining their legs, or raising each other from the ground; in which struggles they display an extraordinary exertion of strength. When one of them is thrown, he immediately retires; while the conqueror sits down for near a minute, then rises,

and goes to the side from which he came, where the victory is proclaimed aloud.

Those who intend to box advance side-ways, changing the side at every pace, having one arm stretched out before, the other behind; and holding in one hand a piece of cord, which they wrap closely about it when they meet with an opponent. Their blows are dealt out with great quickness and activity, and are aimed principally at the head. They box equally well with either hand. Not only boys engage in both these exercises; but it not unfrequently happens that little girls box with great obstinacy. Some of the English contended with them in both exercises, but were generally worsted.

Captain Cook intending to leave behind him some of the animals he had brought, thought proper to make a distribution of them before his departure. He therefore, on the 19th, assembled the chiefs, and marked out his intended presents to them. To the king he gave a bull and a cow; to Mareewagee a Cape ram and two ewes; and to Feenou a horse and a mare. He instructed Omai to tell them that no such animals existed within several months sail of their island; that he had brought them, with a great deal of trouble and expence, for their use; that, therefore, they ought to be careful not to kill any of them till they had multiplied considerably; and finally, that they and their posterity ought to remember that they had received them from the men of Britain. Omai also explained to them their respective uses, as far as his limited knowledge in such points would permit him.

On the 20th Captain Cook walked out with Omai, and in the course of their ramble they found six or seven

women at supper together, two of whom were fed by the others. On their asking the reason of this circumstance, the women replied, taboo mattee. Upon further enquiry, it appeared that one of them, about two months before, had washed the corpse of a chief, on which account she was not allowed to handle any food for five months; and that the other had performed the same office to the dead body of a person of inferior rank, and was therefore under the same restriction, though not for so long a space.

Early on the 21st Poulaho came on board, to invite Captain Cook to an haiva or entertainment, which he designed to give the same day. The captain, after breakfast, attended him to the shore, and found the natives very busy. About one o'clock dances were begun; and towards the evening the night-dances, in which the king himself, apparelled in English manufacture, was a performer: but neither these, nor the dances in the day-time, were so capital as those of Feenou or Mareewagee.

The commodore, in order to be present the whole time, dined on shore. Poulaho sat down with him, but neither eat nor drank, which was owing to the presence of a female, who had been admitted at his request to the dining-party, and who, as they were afterwards informed, was of superior rank to himself. This lady had no sooner dined than she walked up to Poulaho, who applied his hands to her feet; after which she retired. He immediately dipped his fingers into a glass of wine, and then all her attendants paid him obeisance. At his desire, the captain ordered some fire-works to be played off in the evening.

No more entertainments being expected on either

side, and the curiosity of the populace being in a great degree satisfied, most of them went away; some thieves, however, remained, who committed many depredations. During the absence of some of the officers of both ships, who had employed two days in surveying the interior parts of the island, these dextrous thieves had, in the course of their short journey, plundered them of their muskets and necessary ammunition, besides several small articles of the favourite commodities. Inconvenient consequences were likely to have attended this affair; for, when the gentlemen returned, they employed Omai, without consulting Captain Cook, to complain to the king of the treatment they had received. He, not knowing how the captain would proceed in this affair, and apprehending that he might again lay him under restraint, set off early the next morning, and Feenou followed his example; so that not a chief of authority was now remaining in their neighbourhood. The captain was offended at this business, and reprimanded Omai for having presumed to interfere in it. This reprimand induced him to endeavour to bring back his friend Feenou, and he succeeded in his negociation, by assuring him that no violent measures would be pursued to oblige the natives to return what they had stolen. Trusting to this declaration, Feenou came back in the evening, and was favourably received. Poulaho also favoured them with his company the next day. Upon this occasion the two chiefs very justly observed to Captain Cook, that, whenever any of his people wanted to take an excursion into the country, they ought to be made acquainted with it, that they might order proper people to attend them, to prevent such outrages. Though the captain did not afterwards endeavour to recover the articles taken upon

this occasion, the whole of them were returned through the interposition of Feenou, except one musket and a few other insignificant articles.

They had now recruited their ships and repaired their sails; but as an eclipse of the sun was to happen on the 5th of July, the captain determined to stay till that time, to have a chance of observing it.

On June the 26th Captain Cook and a party, accompanied by Poulaho, set out in a boat for Mooa, a kind of village, where he, and the other men of consequence, usually reside. Rowing up the inlet, they saw fourteen canoes fishing in company; in one of which was Poulaho's son. They had then taken some fine mullets, about a dozen of which they put into a boat. The captain having requested to see their method of fishing—a shoal of fish was supposed to be upon one of the banks, which they instantly enclosed in a long net like a seine or set-sun. This the fishers, one getting out into the water, surrounded with the triangular nets which they held in their hands, with which they scooped the fish out of the seine, or caught them as they attempted to leap over it.

Taking leave of the prince and his fishing party, the gentlemen were rowed to the bottom of the bay. As soon as they got on shore, they were conducted to one of Poulaho's houses; which, though tolerably large, seemed to be his private place of residence, and was situated within a plantation. The king seated himself at one end of the house, and those who came to visit him sat down in a semi-circle at the other end. A bowl of kava was immediately prepared, and directions were given to bake some yams. While these were getting ready, some of the gentlemen, together with a few of

the king's attendants, and Omai as their interpreter, went to take a view of a fiatooka, or burying-place, at a small distance from the habitation. It belonged to the king, and consisted of three largish houses, situated on a rising ground, with a small one not far off, all ranged longitudinally. The largest of the three first was the middle house, which was placed in a square, twenty-four paces by twenty-eight, and raised about three feet. The other houses were placed on little mounts. On the floors of these houses, as also on the tops of the mounts, were fine loose pebbles; and the whole was inclosed by large flat stones of coral-rock. One of the houses was open on one side, and two wooden busts of men, rudely carved, were within it. On enquiring what these images were, they were informed that they were memorials of some chiefs who had been buried there, and not meant as the representatives of any deity. It was said that dead bodies had been buried in each of these houses, but no marks of them were to be distinguished. The carved head of an Otaheitean canoe, which had been driven ashore on their coast, was deposited in one of them. On the rising-ground was a grass-plot, on which different large trees were planted. A row of low palms was also planted near one of the houses.

After refreshing themselves with some provisions, they took a pretty large circuit into the country, attended by one of the king's ministers, who would not suffer any of the rabble to follow them, and obliged those whom they met upon their progress to sit down while they were passing; a mark of respect due only to their sovereigns. The greatest part of the country was cultivated, and most of their plantations fenced round. Some-

parts, indeed, lay fallow, and others in a state of nature; the latter afforded large quantities of timber. There were many public and well-beaten paths, leading to different parts of the island. They were conducted to several pools and springs of water, which were, in general, either brackish or stinking.

In the dusk of the evening they returned from their walk, and found their supper in readiness. It consisted of some fish and yams, and a baked hog, in which all the culinary arts of the island had been displayed. There being nothing to amuse them after supper, they lay down to sleep, according to the custom of the country, on mats spread upon the floor, and had a covering of cloth. The king, who became happy with some wine and brandy which had been brought from the ship, also slept in the house, as did several others of the natives. Before day-break they all rose, and entered into conversation by moon-light.

While they were preparing a bowl of kava, Captain Cook went to pay a visit to young Toobou, (Captain Furneaux's friend) who had a house not far distant, which for size and neatness was hardly exceeded in the place. Here also they found a company preparing a morning-draught. The chief made a present to the captain of a living hog, and one that was baked; also a quantity of yams, and a large piece of cloth. Returning to the king, they found him and his attendants drinking the second bowl of kava. That business being performed, he informed Omai that he was immediately going to perform a mourning ceremony called tooge, in memory of a son who had been some time dead, and desired them to accompany him. Naturally expecting to

see somewhat new or curious, they readily complied with the request.

The king stepped out of the house, attended by two old women, and put on a new clothing, over which was placed an old ragged mat. His attendants were habited in the same manner. Thus equipped, they marched off, preceded by eight or ten persons in the same uniform, each of them having likewise a green bough about his neck. Poulaho, who held his bough in his hand till he approached the place of rendezvous, then also put it about his neck. They now entered a small inclosure, wherein was a neat house, and a man sitting before it. As the company entered they took the branches from their necks, and threw them away. The king seated himself, and the others sat before him in the usual manner. By the arrival of other persons the circle increased to upwards of an hundred, principally old men, all dressed in the same manner. The company being assembled, a large root of kava was produced by one of the king's servants, and a capacious bowl that would contain five or six gallons. Many persons now began to chew the root, and the bowl was filled with liquor up to the brim. Others were employed in making drinking-cups of plantain leaves. The first cup that was filled, being presented to the king, he ordered it to be given to another person; the second was also presented to him, and he drank it; the third was offered to Captain Cook. Afterwards, a cup was given to several others, till the liquor was exhausted; and, though not half the company partook of it, no one appeared in the least dissatisfied. All this time the chief and the whole circle sat with a great deal of gravity, hardly speaking

a syllable to each other. As soon as the kava was drank out, to the great astonishment of the gentlemen, they all rose up and dispersed; and Poulaho informed them he was now ready to attend them to the ships.

The kava, (which is more frequently drank here than at any of the other islands) is a species of pepper, which they esteem a valuable article, and cultivate for this purpose, carefully defending the young plants from any injury; and it is usually planted about their houses. It does not often exceed the height of a man, though they are sometimes seen much higher. It has large heart-shaped leaves, and jointed stalks. The root is the only part that is used: after being dug up, it is given to the servants, who, breaking it in pieces, scrape the dirt off, and each chews his portion, which he afterwards spits into a piece of plantain-leaf. Those who are to prepare the liquor collect these mouthfuls together, and deposit them in a large wooden bowl, adding a sufficient quantity of water to make it of a proper strength. It is then well mixed up with the hands, and wrung hard, in order to make it productive of as much liquid as possible. About a quarter of a pint of this beverage is usually put into each cup. It has no perceptible effect upon these people, who use it frequently; but, on some of the English it operated like spirits, occasioning intoxication, or rather stupefaction.

When they returned to the ship, Captain Cook was informed that every thing had been quiet during his absence; not a single theft having been committed; of which Feenou, and Futtafaihe, the king's brother, who had undertaken the management of his countrymen in the captain's absence, boasted not a little. This evinces what power the chiefs have when they are inclined to

execute it; which is not often to be expected; for whatever was stolen was generally conveyed to them.

The next day, however, six or eight of the natives assaulted some of the men who were sawing planks; in consequence of which they were fired on by the sentry; one of whom was wounded, and three were taken. The latter were confined till night, when they were punished, and set at liberty. After this their behaviour was very decent and circumspect; occasioned, as it was imagined, by the man being wounded; for, till this time, they had only heard of the effect of fire-arms, but now they had felt it.

In the interior Messrs. King and Anderson spent a day and night with Futtafaihe. Soon after they arrived a largish hog was killed, which was effected by repeated strokes upon the head. Though the weight of it was at least fifty pounds, the whole, when baked, was placed before them; when they took a small part, and desired the rest might be partaken of by the people sitting round. Futtafaihe could hardly be prevailed upon to eat a morsel.

They were entertained in the evening with a pig for supper, dressed like the hog, and, like that, accompanied with yams and cocoa nuts. When the supper was over, a large quantity of cloth was brought for them to sleep in; but they were disturbed in their repose by a singular instance of luxury, in which their men of consequence indulge themselves; that of being thumped or beat while they are asleep. Two women who sat by Futtafaihe, performed this operation, which they call tooge tooge, by striking his body and legs with both fists till he fell asleep, and, with some intervals, continued it the whole night. The person being fast asleep,

they abate a little of the strength and briskness of the beating; but, if they observe any appearance of this awaking, they resume it. In the morning, they were informed, that Futtafaihe's women relieved each other, and went alternately to sleep. Such a practice as this, in any other country, would be supposed to be destructive of all rest; but here it operates like an opiate, and strongly shews what habit may effect.

Captain Cook had prolonged his stay at this island on account of the approaching eclipse; but, on looking at the micrometer, (on the 2d of July) he found some accident had happened to it, and that it was rendered useless till repaired; which could not be done before the time it was intended to be used. They therefore got on board, this day, all the cattle and other animals, except those that were destined to remain. The captain designed to have left a turkey-cock and hen, but two hens being destroyed by accident, and wishing to carry the breed to Otaheite, he reserved the only remaining pair for that purpose.

The next day they unmoored, in order to be ready for the first favourable wind. The king, who this day dined with them, took particular notice of the plates; which the captain observing, made him an offer of one, either of pewter or of earthen ware. He made choice of the first, and mentioned the several uses to which he intended to apply it; two of which were so very extraordinary that they deserve to be related. Whenever he should visit any of the other islands, he said he would leave this plate behind him at Tongataboo, as his representative, that the people might, in his absence, pay it the homage due to himself in person. On being asked how he had usually been represented in his absence, before

he was in possession of this plate, he informed us that this singular honour had always been conferred on a wooden bowl in which he washed his hands. The other use to which he meant to apply the plate instead of the bowl, was to discover a thief. When any thing had been stolen, and the thief not detected, the people were assembled before him, when he washed his hands in this vessel. After this, it was cleaned, and every man advanced, and touched it with his hand, in the same manner that they touch his foot when they offer him obeisance. If touched by the guilty person, he dropped down dead immediately; and, if any one refused to touch it, such refusal was considered as a sufficient proof of his guilt.

Early on the 5th (the day of the eclipse) the weather was cloudy, with some showers of rain. About nine o'clock the sun broke out at small intervals for about half an hour, but was totally obscured just before the beginning of the eclipse. The sun again appeared at intervals till about the middle of the eclipse, but was seen no more during the remainder of the day.

This island may, with propriety, be called a low one; the only eminent part to be observed from a ship is the S. E. point, though many gently rising and declining grounds are perceivable by those who are on shore. Though the general appearance of the country does not exhibit that beautiful kind of landscape produced by a variety of hills and vallies, rivulets and lawns, yet it conveys an idea of the most exuberant fertility. The surface, at a distance, seems entirely clothed with trees of various sizes: but the tall cocoa-palms raise their tufted heads high above the rest, and are a noble ornament to any country that produces them. The boogo,

which is a species of the fig, is the largest-sized tree upon the island; and the most common bushes and small trees, on the uncultivated spots, are the pandanus, the faitanoo, several sorts of hibiscus, and a few others.

The principal of the cultivated fruits in this island are plantains, of which they have fifteen varieties; the jambu, and the eeevee, the latter being a kind of plumb; and vast quantities of shaddocks, as often found in a natural state as planted. There are two sorts of yams; also a large root called kappe; another like our white potatoes, called mawhaha; the talo, and the jeejee. They have vast numbers of cocoa-nut trees, and three other sorts of palms. Plenty of sugar-cane is cultivated here; also gourds, bamboo, turmeric, and a species of fig called matte; but the catalogue of uncultivated plants is too large to be enumerated.

There are no quadrupeds in this island but hogs, dogs, and a few rats. Fowls of a large breed are domesticated here.

Among the birds are parrots and parroquets, cuckoos, king-fishers, and a bird of the thrush kind, of a dull green colour, which is the only singing-bird here. Among the other land-birds are rails, about the size of a pigeon, of a variegated grey colour; a black sort, with reddish eyes; large violet coots, with red bald crowns; two sorts of fly-catchers; a small swallow; and three sorts of pigeons.

Of water-fowl, are the ducks seen at Annamooka; tropic birds; blue and white herons; noddies; white terns; a new species of a leaden colour; a small bluish curlew; and a large spotted plover.

Among the animals of the reptile, or insect-tribe, are

sea-snakes, (though often seen on shore) about three feet long, with alternate black and white circles; some scorpions, and centipides; also green guanoes, about eighteen inches long, and two smaller sorts. Here are some beautiful moths and butterflies, and some very large spiders; together with others, making in the whole about fifty different sorts of insects.

They were ready to sail on July the 6th, but were obliged to wait for a favourable wind; which gave them an opportunity to be present at a public solemnity to which the king had invited them, and which was to be performed on the 8th. He and all the people of consequence repaired to Mooa on the 7th, where the solemnity was to be exhibited. Several of the gentlemen followed them the next morning, and about eight o'clock arrived at Mooa, where they found the king, with a number of attendants sitting before him, within a small dirty inclosure.

About ten o'clock the people assembled in a large area before the malaee, or great house. At the end of a road, opening into this area, stood several men with spears and clubs, incessantly reciting short sentences, in mournful accents, which conveyed an idea of distress. This was continued about an hour, during which time many people came down the road, each having a yam tied to the middle of a pole, which they laid down before those who continued repeating the sentences. At length the king and prince arrived, and seated themselves upon the area; and the gentlemen were requested to sit down by them, to take off their hats, and to untie their hair. The bearers of the yams having all entered, each pole was taken up between two men, who carried it over their shoulders. They afterwards formed them-

selves into companies of ten or twelve each, and marched across the place with a rapid pace, each company headed by a man who had a club or spear, and defended on the right by several others, armed with different weapons. About two hundred and fifty persons walked in the procession, which was closed by a man carrying on a perch a living pigeon.

This solemnity, called Natche, was not concluded till the next day. Poulaho said it was intended to initiate his son into certain privileges, one of which was that of eating with his father, an honour he had not hitherto enjoyed. There was a mystery in the whole transaction, and from the manner of performing it, as well as the place where it was performed, it was evident that there was a mixture of religion in the institution. Upon no occasion had they regarded the gentlemen's dress and deportment; but now it was required that their hair should flow about their shoulders; that they should be uncovered to the waist; sit cross-legged; and have their hands locked together. It should be observed also that none but the chief people, and those who were concerned in the ceremony, were admitted to assist in the celebration of it.

The day was far spent before the breaking up of the assembly; and as the gentlemen were at some distance from the ships, they were impatient to set out from Mooa. Taking leave of Poulaho, he pressed them earnestly to stay till the next day, in order to be present at a funeral ceremony. Our navigators would gladly have seen this ceremony, had not the tide been now favourable; and the wind, which had been hitherto very boisterous, moderate and settled.

They weighed anchor on the 10th, about eight o'clock

in the morning, and, with a steady gale, turned through the channel, between the small isles called Makkahaa and Monooafai. At ten o'clock at night on the 11th they weathered the east end of the island, and stretched away for Middleberg, or Eooa, (as the inhabitants call it), where they anchored, about eight the next morning, in forty fathoms water; being nearly in the same place where the captain took his station in 1773, when he named it English Road Taoofa the chief, and several of the natives, now visited them on board, and seemed rejoiced at their arrival. Taoofa recollected Captain Cook, and accompanied him on shore in search of fresh water, the procuring of which was the chief object that brought the captain to Eooa. He was conducted to a brackish spring among rocks, between low and high water-mark. When it was perceived that the gentlemen did not approve of this, they were shewn a little way into the island; where, in a deep chasm, they found some excellent water; but rather than undertake the tedious task of conveying it to shore, the captain contented himself with the supply the ships had received at Tongataboo.

Before they returned on board they began a traffic for hogs and yams. Of the former they could not procure many; but of the latter plenty. At this island they landed the ram and two ewes, of the Cape of Good Hope breed, and committed them to the care of Taoofa, who seemed delighted with his charge. While they were lying at anchor, this island had a very different aspect from any that they had lately seen, and formed a most pleasing landscape. In the afternoon of the 13th, some of the gentlemen ascended the highest part of the island, in order to have a perfect view of the country.

Having advanced about half-way up, they crossed a deep valley, the bottom and sides of which were clothed with trees. They found plenty of coral till they approached the summits of the highest hills: the soil near the top, in general, a reddish clay; which, in many places, is very deep. On the most elevated part of the island they saw a round platform, supported by a wall of coral stones.

Captain Cook the next morning planted a pine-apple, and sowed the seeds of melons and other articles, in the chief's plantation. He had reason, indeed, to suppose that his endeavours of this kind would not be fruitless; for a dish of turnips was this day served up at his dinner, which was the produce of the seeds he had left here in 1773.

The captain having fixed upon the 15th for sailing, Taoofa pressed him to stay a little longer, in order to receive a present which he had prepared for him. His entreaties, together with the daily expectation of receiving a visit from some of his friends at Tongataboo, induced him to defer his departure. The next day he received from the chief the present, consisting of two little heaps of yams and a quantity of fruit, which seemed to be collected as at the other isles. On this occasion the greatest part of the inhabitants of the island had assembled. Cudgelling, wrestling, and boxing, were exhibited for our entertainment; and, in the latter combatants of both sexes engaged. The diversions were intended to have been finished with the bomai or night-dance; but an accident happened that either put a total stop to it, or, at least, prevented our navigators staying on shore to see it. One of the sailors was surrounded by twenty or thirty of the natives, some of

whom knocked him down, stripped him, and carried off all his clothes. Hearing of this, Captain Cook seized two canoes and a large hog; and insisted on the chief's not only causing the apparel to be restored, but also on the offenders being delivered up to him. Taoofa seemed greatly concerned at what had happened, and took the necessary steps to satisfy him. The people who were assembled were so alarmed at this affair, that most of them immediately fled. However, when they were informed that the captain meant to take no other measures to revenge the insult, they returned. One of the delinquents was soon delivered up to him, and a shirt and a pair of trowsers restored. The remainder of the stolen goods not coming in before the evening, Captain Cook was obliged to leave them, in order to go aboard; the sea running so high that it was extremely difficult for the boats to get out of the creek even with day-light, and would be attended with much more danger in the dark. He came ashore again the next morning, bringing with a present for Taoofa, in return for what he had received from him. Being early, there were but few people at the landing-place, and even those few not without their fears and apprehensions; but on the captain's desiring Omai to assure them that they did not mean to injure them, and having restored the canoes, and released the offender who had been delivered up to him, they resumed their usual cheerfulness, and a large circle was presently formed, in which the chief and the principal men of the island took their respective places. The remainder of the clothes were at length brought in, but, having been torn off the man's back by pieces, they were not thought worth carrying on board. Taoofa shared the present he had received with three or

four other chiefs, reserving a small part only for himself. This donation so far exceeded their expectation, that a venerable old chief told the captain they were not deserving of it, considering how little he had received from them, and the ill-treatment one of his people had met with. Captain Cook continued with them till they had emptied their bowl of kava; and then, after paying for the hog which he had taken the day before, returned on board, in company with Taoofa and one of Poulaho's servants, by whom he sent a piece of bar-iron as a parting mark of his esteem for that chief, that being as valuable a present as any he could possibly make. They weighed soon after, and, with a light breeze at S. E. stood out to sea, when Taoofa and some other natives left them.

It was not without regret that they now took leave of the Friendly Islands, and their inhabitants, after a cordial intercourse with the latter for between two and three months. During the time they remained here they subsisted, in a great measure, upon the produce of the islands, so that they expended very little of their sea-provisions. The captain rejoiced at having had an opportunity of serving these poor people, by leaving some useful animals among them; and that those intended for Otaheite had acquired fresh strength in the pastures of Tongataboo.

Under the denomination of Friendly Islands must be included not only the group at Hapaee, but also those which have been discovered to the north, nearly under the same meridian, as well as some others under the dominion of Tongataboo, which is the capital and seat of government. From the best information our navigators could receive, this archipelago is very extensive. One of the natives enumerated one hundred and fifty islands.

The most considerable in this neighbourhood are Hamoa, Vavaoo, and Feejee, each of which is larger than Tongataboo; but it does not appear that any European has ever yet seen any one of them.

The natives of the Friendly Islands seldom exceed the common stature, (though some here were above six feet in height) and are strong and well proportioned. Their features are so various, that, unless it be a fulness at the point of the nose, which is common, it is impossible to fix any general likeness by which to characterize them. They have good eyes and teeth; but the latter are neither so well set, nor so remarkably white, as among the Indian nations. Few of them, however, have that uncommon thickness about the lips, so frequent in other islands. The women are less distinguished from the men by their features, than by their general form, which seems destitute of that strong fleshy firmness that appears in the latter. Though the features of some are very delicate, and a true index of their sex, laying claim to a considerable share of beauty and expression, yet the rule is not, by any means, so general as in many other countries. The bodies of most of the females are usually well-proportioned; and some are absolutely perfect models of a beautiful figure. But the extraordinary smallness and delicacy of their fingers, which may be put into competition with any in Europe, seems to be the most remarkable distinction in the women. The general colour among the natives is a cast deeper than the copper-brown; but several of both sexes have a true olive complexion. Some of the women are even much fairer. The mildness, or good-nature, which they abundantly possess, is depicted on their countenances, which are totally free from that savage keenness which always

marks the nations that are in a barbarous state. They are open, cheerful, and good-humoured; however, in the presence of their chiefs they sometimes assume a degree of gravity which has the appearance of reserve. Their pacific disposition is thoroughly evinced from their friendly reception of all strangers.

They are so whimsical in their fashions of wearing their hair, that it is difficult to say which is most in vogue. Some have none on one side of the head, while it remains long no the other side; some have only a part cut short; others have parted with the whole except a single lock on one side. Some permit it to grow its full length, without any of these mutilations. The women usually wear it short. Their hair is, in general, thick, straight, and strong; though some have it bushy, or frizzled. Its natural colour appears to be black, but some of them stain it with a brown or purple powder, and a few give it an orange cast. Their beards too are cut short; and both sexes strip the hair from their arm-pits. The men are stained with a deep blue colour from the middle of the belly to half-way down the thighs.

The dress of both sexes is the same, consisting of a piece of cloth or matting, about two yards in breadth and two yards and a half in length. It is double before, and, like a petticoat, hangs down to the middle of the leg. That part of the garment which is above the girdle is plaited into several folds, which, extended, is sufficient to draw up and wrap round the shoulders. This, as to form, is the general dress; but the fine matting, and long pieces of cloth, are worn only by the superior class of people. The inferior sort are contented with small pieces, and very often have only a covering made of leaves of plants, or the maro, a narrow piece of cloth

or matting like a sash. They pass this between the thighs and round the waist. It is seldom used but by the men. In their haivas, or grand entertainments, they have various dresses, which, though the same in form, are embellished, more or less, with red feathers.

Both men and women occasionally defend their faces from the sun, with little bonnets, made of various sorts of materials. The ornaments worn by those of either sex are the same. Those which are most common are necklaces, made of the fruit of the pandanus, and various sweet-smelling flowers. Others consist of small shells, sharks' teeth, the wing and leg-bones of birds, &c. all of which are pendant upon the breast. Two holes are perforated in the lobes of the ears, in which they wear cylindrical bits of ivory of the length of three inches, introduced at one hole and drawn out of the other; or bits of reeds, filled with yellow pigment.

The employments of the women are making of cloth and mats; the latter excel those of most other countries both with respect to their texture and their beauty. Architecture, boat-building, agriculture, and fishing, are the principal labours of the men. They display very little taste or ingenuity in the construction of their houses. Those of the lower class of people are wretched huts, scarcely sufficient to shelter them from the weather. Those of the better sort are larger, as well as more commodious and comfortable. They are very skilful in building their canoes, which, indeed, are the most perfect of their mechanical productions. The double ones are made sufficiently large to carry about fifty persons, and sail at a great rate. Upon them they generally fix a hut or shed, for the reception of the master and family. They are made of the bread-fruit tree, and the workmanship is extremely neat.

Their warlike weapons are clubs, curiously ornamented, spears, and darts. They also make bows and arrows; but these are intended for amusement, such as shooting at birds, and not for the purposes of war.

Their vegetable diet principally consists of plantains, cocoa-nuts, bread-fruit, and yams. Their chief articles of animal food are hogs, fish, and fowls; but the common people frequently eat rats. Their hogs, fowl, and turtle, however, seem to be only occasional dainties, reserved for persons of rank. Their food is, in general, dressed by baking, as at Otaheite; and they make, from different sorts of fruit, several dishes, which are very good. They sometimes boil their fish in the green leaves of the plantain-tree, which serve as a bag to hold both fish and water: having tied them up, they wrap them again in three or four other leaves, and place them upon stones heated for the purpose: when they are sufficiently done, they not only eat the fish, but drink the liquor, or soup. They are not very cleanly, either in their cookery, or their manner of eating. Their usual drink at their meals is water, or cocoa-nut milk; the kava being only their morning beverage. The food that is served up for the chiefs is generally laid upon plantain-leaves. They rise at day-break, and retire to rest as soon as it becomes dark. They, for the most part, sleep also in the day-time, when the weather is very hot.

It was not ascertained whether their marriages were rendered durable by any kind of solemn contract: it is certain, however, that the major part of the people contented themselves with one wife. The chiefs, indeed, commonly have several women, though there

was only one who was considered in the light of mistress of the family.

They do not worship any visible part of the creation, or any thing made by their own hands. They make no offerings of dogs, hogs, and fruit, (as is the custom at Otaheite), unless emblematically. But there seems to be no reason to doubt of their offering up human sacrifices. Their fiatookas, or morais, are, in general, burying-grounds and places of worship; some of them, however, appeared to be appropriated only to the former purpose; but these were small, and greatly inferior to the rest.

CHAP. III.

They proceed on their Voyage—Toabouai discovered—Arrival in Oheitepeha Bay—Occurrences at Otaheite and the Society Isles—Prosecution of the Voyage to the Coast of North America.

NOTHING remarkable occurred after their departure from the Friendly Islands (except a very heavy squall of wind from the N. July 29,) till August the 8th, when land was observed, bearing N. N. E. about nine or ten leagues distant. At first it appeared like so many separate islands; but, as they approached, they found it was all connected, and formed one and the same island. The next morning they steered round its S.W. part, they saw it guarded by a reef of coral rock, extending, in some places, at least a mile from the land, and a high surf breaking upon it. As they drew near they saw people walking or running along the shore, on several parts of the coast, and, in a short time after, when they had reached the lee-side of the island, they saw two canoes launched, in which were about a dozen men, who paddled towards them. Hereupon they shortened sail, in order to give these canoes time to come up with them, as well as to sound for anchorage. The canoes, after having advanced within pistol-shot of the ships, suddenly stopped. Omai was desired, as was usual on such occasions, to endeavour to prevail upon

the men in them to come nearer; but no arguments could induce them to trust themselves within reach of the vessel. They often pointed eagerly to the shore with their paddles, at the same time calling to them to go thither; and many of their people who were standing upon the beach, held up something white in their hands, which was construed as an invitation for them to land. But the captain did not chuse to risk the advantage of a fair wind, in order to examine an island, that appeared to be but of little consequence. Therefore, after making several unsuccessful attempts to prevail upon these people to come near them, they made sail to the north; having first learned that the name of their island was Toobouai; it is situated in the latitude of 23° 25' S. long. 210° 37' E. Its greatest extent, in any direction, is not above five or six miles. The hills were covered with herbage, except a few rocky cliffs, with patches of trees interspersed to their summits. Those whom they saw in the canoes were a stout copper-coloured people, some wearing their hair (which was straight and black) flowing about the shoulders, and others having it tied in a bunch on the crown of the head. Their faces were roundish and full, but the features flat: and their countenance expressed a degree of natural ferocity. Their covering was a piece of narrow stuff wrapped round the waist, and passing between the thighs; but some of those whom they beheld upon the beach were completely clothed in white. Some in the canoes had their necks ornamented with pearl shells: and one of them continued blowing a large conchshell, to which a reed, of about two feet long, was fixed; he began in a long tone, without any variation; and afterwards converted it into a kind of musical instrument.

Having steered to the N. with a fresh gale, on the 12th they perceived the island of Maitea. Otaheite appeared soon after; the point of Oheitepeha Bay bearing W. about four leagues distant. As they drew near the island, they were attended by several canoes, each conducted by two or three men. But, as they were of the lower class, Omai seemed to take no particular notice of them, nor they of him. At length a chief, whom Captain Cook had known before, named Ootee, and Omai's brother-in-law, who happened to be now at this corner of the island, and three or four others, all of whom knew Omai, before he embarked with Captain Furneaux, came on board. Yet there was nothing in the least tender or striking in their meeting, but, on the contrary, a perfect indifference on both sides, till Omai, conducting his brother into the cabin, opened a drawer, and gave him a few red feathers. This circumstance being soon communicated to the rest of the natives on deck, Ooree, who before would hardly speak to him, now begged that they might be tayos (friends) and exchange names. Omai accepted of the honour, and a present of red feathers ratified the agreement; and Ootee, by way of recompence, sent ashore for a hog. It was evident, however, that it was not the man, but his property, that they esteemed. Had he not exhibited his treasure of red feathers, a commodity highly estimated in the island, it is a matter of great doubt whether they would have bestowed a single cocoa-nut upon him.

News having been propagated on shore, of red feathers being on board their ships, they were, early the next morning, surrounded by a multitude of canoes, crowded with people, with plenty of hogs and fruits. A quantity of feathers, which might be taken from the

body of a tom-tit, would, at that time, purchase a hog of forty or fifty pounds weight. But as the whole ship's crew were possessed of some of this precious article of trade, it decreased above five hundred per cent. in its value in a few hours.

Soon after they had anchored, Omai's sister came on board, to congratulate him on his arrival. It was pleasing to observe, that, to the honour of each of them, their meeting was marked with expressions of the tenderest affection, more easily conceived than described. When this affecting scene was closed, and the ship properly moored, Omai attended Captain Cook on shore. The captain's first object was to pay a visit to a man, whom Omai represented as a very extraordinary personage indeed, saying he was the God of Bolabola. They saw him seated under one of those awnings, which are usually carried in their larger canoes. He was old, and had so far lost the use of his limbs, that he was carried from place to place upon a hand-barrow. From Omai's extraordinary account of his person, the captain expected to have seen religious adoration paid to him: but he saw very little to distinguish him from their other chiefs. Omai presented to him a tuft of red feathers, fastened to the end of a small stick; but, after a little conversation with this Bolabola man, his attention was excited by the presence of his mother's sister, who was already at his feet, and had bedewed them plentifully with tears of joy. The captain left him with the old lady in this situation, surrounded by a number of people, and went to take a survey of a house, said to have been erected by strangers lately landed there. He found it still standing, at a small distance from the beach. It was composed of wooden materials, which appeared to

have been brought hither, ready prepared, in order to set up as occasion might require; and consisted of two small rooms, in the inner of which were a bedstead, a bench, a table, some old hats, and other trifles, of which the natives seemed to be very careful. It appeared by an inscription, to have been erected by some Spaniards, who had been lately here in two ships from Lima.

When Captain Cook returned, he found Omai haranguing a very large company; and could with difficulty disengage him, to accompany him on board, where he had to settle the crew's stated allowance of spirituous liquors, to an abridgment of which they cheerfully consented. He ordered Captain Clerke to make a similar proposal to his people; which they also readily agreed to. The serving of grog was therefore immediately stopped, except on Saturday nights, when all the men had a full allowance of it, to enable them to drink the healths of their female friends in England.

They began, the next day, some necessary operations, such as inspecting the provisions in the main and fore hold, getting the casks of beef and pork, &c. out of the ground tier, and putting a quantity of ballast in their place. The ship was ordered to be caulked, which she stood in much need of; having, at times, made a considerable deal of water on their passage from the Friendly Islands. Captain Cook also put his cattle on shore, and appointed two of his men to look after them while grazing; not intending to leave any of them on this part of the island.

It rained almost incessantly the two following days, notwithstanding which, they were visited by the natives from every quarter, the news of their arrival having most rapidly spread. Waheiadooa, though at a consi-

derable distance, had been informed of it; and, in the afternoon of the 16th, a chief, named Etorea, who was his tutor, brought Captain Cook two hogs as a present from him, acquainting him, at the same time, that he himself would attend him the day after. He was punctual to his promise; for the captain received a message from him early the next morning, notifying his arrival, and requesting he would go ashore to meet him. In consequence of this invitation, Omai and he prepared to make him a formal visit. Omai, on this occasion, took some pains to dress himself, not after the manner of the English, nor that of Otaheite, or Tongataboo, or in the dress of any other country upon earth; but in a strange medley of all the habiliments and ornaments he was possessed of. Thus equipped, they got ashore, and first paid a visit to Etary; who, carried on a hand-barrow, accompanied them to a large building, where he was set down; Omai seated himself on one side of him, and Captain Cook on the other. The captain caused a piece of Tongataboo cloth to be spread, on which were placed the presents he intended to make. The young chief soon after arrived, attended by his mother, and several men, who all seated themselves opposite to us. A man, who sat near the captain, made a short speech, consisting of separate sentences; part of which was dictated by those about him. Another, on the opposite side, near the chief, spoke next; Etary after him, and then Omai, &c. The subject of these orations were Captain Cook's arrival, and his connections with them. The young chief, at length, was directed, by his attendants, to embrace Captain Cook; and, as a confirmation of this treaty of friendship, they exchanged names. After these ceremonies were over,

he and his friends accompanied the captain to dine with him on board.

On the 19th Captain Cook received from the young chief a present of ten or a dozen hogs, some cloth, and a quantity of fruit. In the evening they exhibited some fire-works, which both pleased and astonished the numerous spectators.

Having provided a fresh supply of water, and finished all their necessary operations, on the 22d they brought off their animals from shore, and made ready for sea. While the ships were unmooring, Omai and Captain Cook landed, in the morning of the 23d, to take leave of the young chief. While they were with him, one of those persons whom they called Eatooas, from a persuasion that they possess the spirit of the divinity, presented himself before them. He had all the appearances of insanity about him, and his only covering was a quantity of plantain leaves wrapped round his waist. He uttered what he had to say in a low, squeaking voice, so as hardly to be understood; but Omai said he perfectly comprehended him.

Having got under sail on the 23d, they steered for Matavai Bay, where the Resolution anchored the same evening; but the Discovery did not get in till the next morning.

Otoo, the king of the whole island, accompanied by a great number of the natives in their canoes, came from Oparre, his place of residence, and having landed on Matai Point, sent a messenger on board, intimating his desire to see Captain Cook there. He accordingly went ashore, attended by Omai and some of the officers. They found a vast multitude of people assembled on this occasion, in the midst of whom was the king, with

his father, his two brothers, and three sisters. The captain went towards him and saluted him, being followed by Omai, who kneeled and embraced his legs. Though Omai had prepared himself for this ceremony, by dressing himself in his best apparel, and behaved with great respect and modesty, yet very little notice was taken of him. He made the king a present of two or three yards of gold cloth, and a large piece of red feathers, and the captain gave him a gold-laced hat, a suit of fine linen, some tools, a quantity of red feathers, and one of the bonnets worn at the friendly Islands.

This visit being over, the king, and all the royal family, accompanied Captain Cook on board, followed by several canoes, plentifully laden with all kinds of provisions. Each of the family owned a part; so that the captain had a present from every one of them; and each received from him a separate present in return. Not long after, the king's mother came on board, bringing with her some provisions and cloth, which she divided between Captain Cook and Omai. Though the latter was but little noticed at first by his countrymen, they no sooner gained information of his wealth than they began to court his friendship. Captain Cook encouraged them as far as lay in his power, being desirous of fixing him with Otoo; for, intending to leave all his European animals at this island, he thought Omai would be able to give the natives some instruction with regard to their use, and the management of them. Besides, he was convinced, that the farther Omai was removed from his native island, the more he would be respected. But, unfortunately, Omai rejected his advice, and behaved in so imprudent a manner, that he soon lost the

friendship of Otoo, and of all the most considerable persons at Otaheite.

After dinner, a party of the gentlemen accompanied Otoo to Oparre, taking with them some poultry, consisting of a peacock and hen, a turkey-cock and hen, three geese, one gander, four ducks, and a drake. All these they left at Oparre, in the possession of Otoo; and these geese and ducks began to breed before they sailed. They found there a gander that Captain Wallis had given to Oberea ten years before; they also met with several goats, and the Spanish bull, whom they kept tied to a tree near the habitation of Otoo; they never beheld a finer animal of his kind. He now belonged to Etary, and had been conveyed from Oheitepeha to this place in order to be shipped for Bolabola. The next day Captain Cook sent to this bull the three cows that he had on board; and the bull which he had brought, the horse, and mare, and sheep, were now put on shore at Matavia. Having thus disposed of these animals, he found himself eased of the extraordinary trouble and vexation that had attended the bringing this living cargo to such a distance.

As Captain Cook intended to continue here some time, they set up their observatories on Matavai Point; and, adjoining to them, two tents were pitched, for the reception of a guard, and of such people as might be left on shore in different departments. The command, at this station, was entrusted to Mr. King; who also attended the astronomical and other observations. While they remained here, the crews of both ships were occupied in many necessary occupations.

On the 26th, a piece of ground was cleared for a garden, and planted with several articles. Some potatoes,

melons, and pine-apples, were in a fair way of succeeding before the gentlemen quitted the place. They had brought from the Friendly Islands several shaddock-trees, which they also planted here. Many of the natives assembled to taste the first fruit it produced; but the grapes being still sour, they considered it as little better than poison, and trod it under foot. In that state Omai accidentally found it, and was rejoiced at the discovery; for he was confident that, if he had but grapes, he could easily make wine. Accordingly, he had several slips cut off from the tree, with an intention of carrying them away with him; and he pruned and put in order the remains of it.

Before they had been two days at anchor in Matavai Bay, they were visited by all their old friends; they also found here the young man whom they called Oedidee, but whose real name is Heete-heete. Captain Cook had carried him from Ulietea on board his ship in 1773 and brought him back in the succeeding year, after he had visited the Friendly Islands, New-Zealand, Easter-Island, and the Marquesas. He had come from Bolabola (of which he was a native) to Otaheite, about three months before, probably with the sole view of gratifying his curiosity. He preferred the modes, and even the dress, of his countrymen, to those of the English; for, though Captain Cook gave him some clothes, he, after a few days, declined wearing them. This instance may be adduced as a proof of the strong inclination of mankind in general to habits acquired at an early age.

In the morning of the 27th, a man from Oheitepeha said that two Spanish ships had anchored in that bay the preceding night; and to confirm this intelligence, he produced some coarse blue cloth, which, he said, he had

got out of one of the ships. He further said, that Mateema was in one of the ships; and that they would come to Matavai in two or three days. These and some other circumstances which he mentioned, gave the story so much the appearance of truth, that Captain Cook dispatched Lieutenant Williamson in a boat to look into Oheitepeha Bay; and, in the mean time, both their ships were put in a posture of defence. For, though England and Spain were at peace when the captain left England, he did not know but that a different scene might, by this time, have opened. Upon enquiry, however, they had reason to imagine that the relater of the story had imposed upon them; and this was confirmed by Mr. Williamson's report the following day.

In the evening of the 29th the islanders made a precipitate retreat, both from their land-station, and from on board the ships. It was conjectured that this arose from their knowing that some theft had been committed, and apprehending punishment upon that account. At length it appeared that one of the surgeon's mates had made an excursion into the country to purchase curiosities, and had taken with him four hatchets for the purpose of exchange. Having been so imprudent as to employ a native to carry them, the fellow took an opportunity of running off with so valuable a prize. This was the reason of the sudden flight, in which Otoo himself, and all his family, had joined; and it was with difficulty that the captain stopped them, after following them for the space of two or three miles. As he had determined to take no measures for the recovery of the hatchets, that his people for the future might be more upon their guard against such negligence, every thing quickly resumed its former tranquillity.

The next morning some messengers arrived from Eimeo, with intelligence that the people of that island were in arms; and that Otoo's partizans there had been obliged by the opposite party to retreat to the mountains. The quarrel between the two islands, which began in 1774, had partly subsisted ever since. A formidable armament had sailed soon after Captain Cook left Otaheite in his last voyage; but the malcontents of Eimeo had made so gallant a resistance, that the fleet had returned without success; and now another expedition was deemed necessary. On the arrival of these messengers, the chiefs assembled at Otoo's house, where the captain actually was at that time, and had the honour of being admitted into their council. One of the messengers opened the business with a speech of considerable length, the purport of which was to explain the situation of affairs at Eimeo, and to excite the Otaheitean chiefs to arm on the occasion. This opinion was opposed by others who were against commencing hostilities; and the debate was for some time carried on with great order and decorum. In the end, the party for war prevailed; and it was resolved, though not unanimously, that a strong force should be sent to Eimeo. Otoo said very little during the whole debate. Those of the council who were inclinable for war, applied to the captain for his assistance; and all of them were desirous of knowing what part he would take. Omai was sent for to act as his interpreter; but, as he could not be found, the captain, being under a necessity of speaking for himself, told them, as well as he could, that, as he was not perfectly acquainted with the dispute, and as the natives of Eimeo had never given him the least cause of offence, he could not think of engaging in hostilities

against them. With this declaration they either were, or appeared to be, satisfied. On enquiry into the cause of the war, it was said that, several years ago, a brother of Waheiadooa, of Tiaraboo, was sent to Eimeo, at the desire of Maheine, a popular chief of that island, to be their king; but had not been there many days before Maheine, having caused him to be put to death, set up for himself, in opposition to Tierataboonooe, nephew of the deceased, who now became the lawful heir, or perhaps had been appointed, by the people of Otaheite, to succeed to the government on the death of the other.

Towha, who is related to Otoo, and chief of the district of Tettaha, and who had been commander-in-chief of the armament sent against Eimeo in 1774, happened not to be at Matavai at this time, and, therefore, was not present at these consultations. It appeared, however, that he was no stranger to what was transacted; and that he entered into the affair with great eagerness and spirit. For, on the 1st of September, a messenger arrived from him, to acquaint Otoo that he had killed a man to be sacrificed to the Eatooa, with the view of imploring the assistance of the deity against Eimeo. This ceremony was to be performed at the great morai, at Attahooroo; and Otoo's presence was necessary on the occasion. Captain Cook was desirous of being present at this solemnity, and therefore proposed to Otoo that he might be permitted to accompany him. To this the king readily consented; and they immediately set out in the captain's boat, with his old friend Potatou, Mr. Anderson, and Mr. Webber, while Omai followed them in a canoe. In their way they landed upon a small island lying off Tettaha, where they found Towha and

his attendants. Before they parted, Towha gave to Otoo two or three red feathers, tied up in a tuft; the gentlemen then re embarked, having taken on board a priest who was to assist at the solemnity.

As soon as they landed at Attahooroo, which was about two o'clock, Otoo desired that the sailors might be ordered to continue in the boat; and that Captain Cook, Mr. Anderson, and Mr. Webber, would take off their hats as soon as they should come to the morai, to which they immediately proceeded, attended by numbers of men, and some boys; but not one woman was present. They found four priests, with their assistants, waiting for them. The dead body, or sacrifice, was in a small canoe that lay on the beach, fronting the morai. Two of the priests, with several of their attendants, were sitting by the canoe; the others at the morai.

The ceremonies now commenced. One of the attendants of the priests brought a young plantain-tree, and laid it down before the king. Another approached, bearing a small tuft of red feathers, twisted on some fibres of the cocoa-nut husk, with which he touched one of Otoo's feet, and afterwards retired with it to his companions. One of the priests who was seated at the morai now began a long prayer; and, at particular times, sent down young plantain-trees, which were placed upon the sacrifice. During this prayer, an islander, who stood by the officiating priest, held in his hands two bundles, in one of which was the royal maro; and the other, (if we may be allowed the expression) was the ark of the Eatooa. The prayer being finished, the priests at the morai, with their assistants, went and sat down by those who were upon the beach, carrying the two bundles with them. They here renewed their prayers; du-

ring which, the plantain-trees were taken, one by one, at various times, from off the dead body, which, being wrapped up in cocoa-leaves and small branches, was now taken out of the canoe, and laid upon the beach. The priests placed themselves around it, some standing, and others sitting; and one or more of them repeated sentences for about ten minutes. The body was now stripped of the leaves and branches, and placed parallel with the sea-shore. Then one of the priests, standing at the feet of the corpse, pronounced a long prayer, in which he was occasionally joined by the others, each of them holding a tuft of red feathers in his hand. During this prayer, some hair was pulled off the head of the intended sacrifice, and the left eye was taken out; both which being wrapped up in a green leaf, were presented to the king; who, however, did not touch them, but gave to the man who presented them the tuft of red feathers which he had received from Towha. This, with the eye and hair, was taken to the priests. Not long after, his majesty sent them another piece of feathers. In the course of this last ceremony, a king-fisher making a noise in the tree, Otoo turned to Captain Cook, saying, "That is the Eatooa;" and seemed to consider it as a favourable prognostic.

The corps was then carried a little way, and laid under a tree; near which were fixed three thin pieces of wood, variously carved. The bundles of cloth were placed on a part of the morai, and the tufts of red feathers were laid at the feet of the dead body, round which the priests stationed themselves; and the gentlemen were now permitted to go as near as they pleased. He who seemed to be the chief priest spoke for about a quarter of an hour, with different tones and gestures,

sometimes appearing to expostulate with the deceased, at other times asking several questions; then making various demands, as if the dead person either had power himself, or interest with the deity, to engage him to grant such requests; among which he desired him to deliver Eimeo, Maheine its chief, the women, hogs and other things of the island, into their hands; which was, indeed, the express object of the sacrifice. He then prayed near half an hour in a whining tone, and two other priests joined in the prayer, in the course of which a priest plucked some more hair from the head of the corpse, and put it upon one of the bundles. The chief priest now prayed alone, holding in his hand the feathers received from Towha. Having finished, he gave them to another priest, who prayed in like manner; then all the tufts of feathers were placed upon the bundles of the cloth, which concluded the ceremony at this place.

The dead body was now carried to the most conspicuous part of the morai, with the feathers and the two bundles of cloth, while the drums beat slowly. The feathers and bundles were laid against the pile of stones, and the body at the foot of them. The priests having again seated themselves round the corpse, renewed their prayers, while some of their assistants dug a hole about the depth of two feet, into which they threw the victim, and covered it over with stones and earth. While they were committing the body to the grave, a boy squeaked aloud, upon which Omai said to Captain Cook that it was the Eatooa. A fire having been made in the mean time, a lean half-starved dog was produced, and killed by twisting his neck. The hair was then singed off, and the entrails being taken out, were thrown into the fire,

where they were left to be consumed; but the kidney, heart, and liver, were only roasted, by being put on heated stones; and the carcase of the dog, after being rubbed over with the blood, was, with the liver, &c. laid down before the priests, who were seated round the grave praying. They for some time uttered ejaculations over the dog, while two men, at intervals, beat very loud on two drums; and a boy screamed, in a loud shrill voice, three times. This, they said, was to invite the Eatooa to feast on the banquet that they had provided for him. When the priests had finished their prayers, the body, heart, liver, &c. of the dog, were placed on a whatta, (scaffold) about six feet in height, on which lay the remains of two other dogs, and of two pigs, which had been lately sacrificed. The priests and attendants now gave a kind of shout, which put an end to the ceremony for the present. The evening being arrived, the gentlemen were conducted to a house belonging to Potatou, where they were entertained and lodged for the night. Having been informed that the religious rites were to be renewed the next morning, the gentlemen would not quit the place while any thing remained to be seen. Some of them repaired to the scene of action early in the morning; and soon afterwards, a pig was sacrificed, and laid upon the same scaffold with the others. The priests having offered their prayers, and the tufts of red feathers being put, one by one, upon the ark of the Eatooa, four pigs more were produced, one of which was immediately killed, and the three others were taken to a neighbouring sty. After further prayers and ceremonies, the pig that had been killed was cleaned, and its entrails taken out. These happened to have many of those convulsive motions which frequent-

ly appear, in different parts, when an animal is killed; and this was considered as a very favourable omen to the intended expedition. After being exposed for some time, the entrails were carried and laid down before the priests. While one of them prayed, another closely inspected the entrails, and continued turning them gently with a stick. Having been sufficiently examined, they were thrown into the fire. The sacrificed pig, and its liver, heart, &c. were now put upon the scaffold where the dog had been deposited; and then all the feathers, except the ostrich plume, being inclosed in the ark, an end was put to the whole solemnity.

The unfortunate victim offered on this occasion, was, to appearance, a middle-aged man, and was one of the lowest class of the people. But it did not appear that they had fixed upon him on account of his having committed any particular crime that deserved death. It is certain, however, that they usually select such guilty persons for their sacrifices, or else vagabonds, who have no visible way of procuring an honest livelihood. Captain Cook having examined the appearance of the body of the unhappy sufferer now offered up to the object of these people's worship, observed that it was bloody about the head and face, and much bruised upon the right temple, which denoted the manner in which he had been killed. And they were informed that he had been knocked on the head with a stone.

Whenever any one of the principal chiefs deems a human sacrifice necessary, on any great emergency, he fixes upon the victim, and then dispatches some of his trusty servants, who fall upon him suddenly, and either stone him to death, or beat out his brains with a club. The sovereign is next acquainted with it, whose pre-

sence is said to be absolutely requisite at the solemn rites that follow; and, indeed, on the late occasion, Otoo bore a capital part. The solemnity itself is termed Poore Eree, (the prayer of the chief) and the victim is called Taata-tahoo, (consecrated man.)

The morai where the late sacrifice was offered, is always appropriated for the burial of the king of the whole island, and likewise of his family, and some other persons of distinguished rank. It differs little, except in extent, from the common morais. Its principal part is a large oblong pile of stones, about thirteen feet in height, and contracted towards the top, with a quadrangular area on each side, loosely paved with pebbles, under which the bones of the chiefs are deposited. Not far from the end nearest the sea is the place of sacrifice, there is a very large whatta, on which the offerings of fruits, and other vegetables are placed; but the animals are laid on a smaller one, and the human sacrifices are interred under the pavement. There are several reliques scattered about the place; such as small stones raised in various parts of the pavement, some with bits of cloth fastened round them, others entirely covered with it; and, upon the side of the large pile, fronting the area, are a great number of pieces of carved wood, in which their gods are supposed to reside occasionally. There is a heap of stones at one end of the large scaffold, with a sort of platform on one side. On this they deposit all the skulls of the human sacrifices, which they take up after they have remained under ground for some months. Just above them many of the carved pieces of wood are placed; and here the maro, and the other bundle, which was supposed to contain the god Ooro, were laid during the celebration of the late solemn rites.

The gentlemen having embarked about twelve o'clock, in order to return to Matavai, in their way paid a visit to Towha, who had continued in the little island where they met him the preceding day. Some conversation on public affairs passed between Otoo and him; and the latter entreated Captain Cook once more to join them as an ally, in the war against Eimeo. By his positive refusal, he entirely lost the good opinion of this chief.

Before they parted, the gentlemen were asked if the solemnity had answered their expectations. They had been silent during the celebration of the horrid ceremony; but, as soon as it was completed, freely expressed their sentiments upon the subject to Otoo and his attendants; consequently Captain Cook did not conceal his detestation of it in this conversation with Towha. Omai acted as an interpreter, in conveying the captain's sentiments to Towha on the subject of the late sacrifice; and he supported his arguments with such spirit, that the chief appeared to be extremely angry; especially on being informed that if he had taken away the life of a man of England, as he had done here, his rank would not have protected him from an ignominious death. Upon this, he exclaimed, maeno! maeno! (vile! vile!) and would not hear a syllable more about it.

Leaving Towha, the gentlemen proceeded to Oparre, where Otoo solicited them to pass the night. They landed in the evening; and, on their way to his habitation, had an opportunity of observing how these people amuse themselves in their private heevas. They saw about a hundred of them sitting in a house; in the midst of whom were two women, and an old man behind

each of them beating gently upon a drum; and the women, at intervals, singing with great softness and delicacy. The assembly was very attentive, and seemed as it were absorbed in the pleasure the music gave them; few of them taking any notice of the strangers, and the performance never once ceasing. When the party arrived at Otoo's house, it was almost dark. Here they were entertained with one of their public heevas, or plays, in which his three sisters represented the principal characters. This they call a heeve raa, and no person is suffered to enter the house or area where it is exhibited. This is always the case when the royal sisters are the performers. Their dress on this occasion was truly elegant and picturesque, and they acquitted themselves in a very distinguished manner; though some comic interludes, wherein four men were the performers, seemed to afford greater entertainment to the audience, which was numerous. The captain and his companions proceeded the next morning to Matavai, leaving Otoo at Oparre; but his mother, sisters, and many other women, attended the captain on board, and Otoo followed a short time after.

On the 4th, a party, among whom was Otoo, dined ashore with Omai, who provided excellent fare, consisting of fish, fowls, pork, and puddings. Dinner being over, Captain Cook accompanied Omai home to his dwelling, where he found all his servants busy in getting a quantity of provisions ready for him. Amongst other articles, there was a large hog, which they killed in his presence. There was also a large pudding, the whole process in making which the captain saw. It was composed of bread-fruit, plantains, taro, and plam, or pandanus-nuts, each rasped, scraped, or beat up fine,

and baked by itself. A quantity of the juice of cocoa-nut-kernels was put into a kind of wooden tray. The other articles, hot from the oven, were put into this vessel, together with some hot stones, in order to make the contents simmer. Three or four persons were employed in stirring up the several ingredients till they were perfectly incorporated, and the juice of the cocoa-nut was turned to oil; and the whole mass, at last, was nearly of the consistency of hasty-pudding. The hog being baked, and the pudding being made, they, together with two living hogs, some bread-fruit, and cocoa-nuts, were sent on board the captain's ship in a canoe, followed by him and all the royal family.

On the 7th, in the evening, our navigators exhibited some fire-works before a vast concourse of people, some of whom were highly entertained, but the greater number were much terrified with the exhibition; insomuch that they could hardly be prevailed on to keep together, to see the whole of the entertainment. What concluded the business was a table-rocket. It flew off the table, and dispersed the whole croud in an instant; even the most resolute amongst them now fled with precipitation.

A party dined the next day with Oedidee on fish and pork. The hog, which weighed about thirty pounds was alive, dressed, and upon the table, within the hour.

The next day Captain Cook received a present of five hogs and some fruit from Otoo; and one hog and some fruit from each of his sisters. Indeed, Otoo was equally attentive not only to supply their wants but contribute to their amusement. On the 10th he treated the gentlemen at Oparre with a play. His three sisters were

the performers, and their dresses were new and elegant, much more so than they had met with in any of these islands.

Our navigators quitted Oparre in the evening, leaving Otoo and all the royal family. The captain saw none of them till the 12th; when all, except the chief himself, honoured him with a visit. He was gone, they said, to Attahooroo, to assist at another human sacrifice, sent by the chief of Tiaraboo to be offered up at the morai. This second instance, within so short a period, was a melancholy proof that the victims of his bloody superstition are very numerous amongst this humane people. The captain would have been present at this sacrifice also, had he been earlier informed of it, but now it was too late.

The next morning Otoo returned, and the following day, being now honoured with his company, Captains Cook and Clerke mounted on horseback, and rode round the plain of Matavai, to the astonishment of a vast train of spectators. Once or twice before this, Omai had, indeed, attempted to get on a horse, but he had as often fallen off, before he could contrive to seat himself properly; this was, therefore, the first time they had seen any body on horseback. What the captains had begun was repeated daily by one or another of their people; and yet the curiosity of the people continued unabated. It appeared that they conveyed to them a better idea of the greatness of other nations than all the novelties that their European visitors had carried amongst them.

The next day Etary, or Olla, the god of Bolabola, removed from the neighbourhood of Matavai to Oparre, attended by several sailing canoes.

On the 18th, Captain Cook, Mr. Anderson, and

Omai, went again to Oparre, accompanied by Otoo; taking with them the sheep which the captain intended to leave upon the island. They consisted of an English ram and ewe, and three Cape ewes; all of which he made a present of to Otoo.

Having dined with Otoo, the gentlemen returned to Matavai, leaving him at Oparre. This day and the 19th they were very sparingly supplied with fruit. Otoo being informed of this, he and his brother, who had particularly attached himself to Captain Clerke, came from Oparre with a large supply for both ships. All the royal family came the next day with presents, so that they now had more provisions than they could consume.

Having got all their water on board, and every thing in order, the captain began to think of quitting the island, that he might have a sufficient time for visiting others in this neighbourhood. Accordingly they removed their observatories, and instruments from the shore, and bent the sails.

Early the next morning, Otoo came on board to inform Captain Cook that the war-canoes of Matavai, and of three other districts, were going to join those belonging to Oparre, and that part of the island; and that there would be a general review there. The squadron of Matavai was soon in motion; and after parading for some time about the bay, assembled ashore near the middle of it. Captain Cook now went in his boat to take a survey of them. What they call their war-canoes, which are those with stages, on which they fight, amount to about sixty in number: there are nearly as many more of a smaller size. The captain was ready to have attended them to Oparre; but the chiefs soon after form-

ed a resolution that they would not move till the next day. This appeared to be a fortunate delay, as it afforded him an opportunity of getting some insight into their manner of fighting. He therefore desired Otoo to give orders that some of them should go through the necessary manœuvres. Accordingly, two of them were ordered out of the bay, in one of which Otoo, Captain Cook, and Mr. King, embarked, and Omai went on board the other. As soon as they had got sufficient sea-room, they faced, advanced, and retreated, by turns, as quick as their rowers could paddle. In the mean time the warriors on the stages flourished their weapons, and played a variety of antics, which could answer no other purpose than that of rousing their passions to prepare them for the onset. Otoo stood by the side of one stage giving the necessary orders when to advance and when to retreat. Great judgment, and a very quick eye, seemed requisite in this department, to seize every advantage, and to avoid every disadvantage. At length, after several times advancing to, and retreating from, each other, the two canoes closed, stage to stage; and after a severe, though short conflict, all the troops on Otoo's stage were supposed to be killed, and Omai and his associates boarded them, when instantly Otoo, and all the paddlers in his canoe, leaped into the sea, as if reduced to the necessity of preserving their lives by swimming.

Early on the 22d, Otoo and his father came on board, to know when Captain Cook proposed sailing. For, hearing that there was a good harbour at Eimeo, he had informed them, that he should visit that island on his passage to Huaheine; and they proposed to accompany him, and that their fleet should sail at the same

time, to reinforce Towha. Being ready to take his departure, he submitted to them the appointment of the day; and the Wednesday following was determined upon; when he was to receive on board Otoo, his father, mother, and the whole family. These points being agreed on, the captain proposed immediately setting out for Oparre, where all the fleet were to be assembled that day, and to be reviewed.

As Captain Cook was getting into his boat, news arrived that a treaty had been concluded between Towha and Maheine, and Towha's fleet had returned to Attahooroo. From this unexpected event, the war canoes, instead of rendezvousing at Oparre, were ordered to their respective districts. Captain Cook, however, followed Otoo to Oparre, accompanied by Mr. King and Omai. Soon after their arrival, a messenger arrived from Eimeo, and related the conditions of the peace, or rather truce, it being only for a limited time.

Captain Cook now returned to his ship, attended by Otoo's mother, his three sisters, and several other women. At first, the captain imagined that this numerous train came into his boat in order to get a passage to Matavai. But they assured him, they intended passing the night on board, for the purpose of curing a disorder he had complained of; which was a rheumatic pain, extending from the hip to the foot. He accepted the friendly offer, had a bed prepared for them upon the cabin floor, and submitted himself to their directions. He was first desired to lie down amongst them; when all those who could get near him, began to squeeze him with both hands all over the body, but more particularly on the parts complained of, till they made his bones crack, and his flesh became almost a mummy. In short,

after suffering this severe discipline about a quarter of an hour, he was happy to get away from them. The operation, however, gave him immediate relief, and encouraged him to a repetition of the same discipline, before he retired to bed; and it was so effectual, that he found himself pretty easy the whole night after. His female physicians very obligingly repeated their prescription the next morning, before they left him, and again in the evening, when they returned; after which, the cure being perfected, they took their leave of the captain the following morning. This is called romee, among the natives, an operation far exceeding that of the flesh-brush, or any external friction. It is universally practised amongst these islanders, and generally by women.

As our navigators were now upon the point of sailing, the chiefs paid them a visit on the 26th, and brought more hogs with them than they wanted; for, having no salt left to preserve any, they had fully sufficient for their present use.

For the many valuable things which Omai had given away, he received one good thing in return. This was a very fine double sailing canoe, completely equipped. Some time before, the captain had made up a suit of English colours for him; but he considered them as too valuable to be used at this time; and, therefore, patched up a parcel of flags and pendants, to the number of ten or a dozen, which he spread on different parts of his canoe. This, as might be expected, drew together a great number of people to look at her. Omai's streamers were a mixture of English, French, Spanish, and Dutch, being all the European colours he had seen. He had completely stocked himself with cloth and co-

coa-nut oil, which are better, and more plentiful at Otaheite, than at any of the Society Islands; insomuch, that they are considered as articles of trade. Omai would not have behaved so inconsistently, as he did in many instances, had it not been for his sister and brother-in-law, who, together with a few select acquaintances, engrossed him to themselves, in order to strip him of every article he possessed. And they would certainly have succeeded, if Captain Cook had not taken the most useful articles of his property into his possession.

On the 28th, Otoo came on board, and informed Captain Cook that he had got a canoe, which he desired he would take with him, as a present from him to the king of Great Britain, whom he called Earee rahie no Pretane. The captain was highly pleased with Otoo, for this mark of his gratitude. At first, the captain supposed it to have been a model of one of their vessels of war; but it proved to be a small ivahah, about sixteen feet long. It was double, and probably had been built for the purpose; and was decorated with carved work, like their canoes in general. It being too large for him to take on board, he could only thank him for his good intention; but he would have been much better pleased if his present could have been accepted.

By calms, and gentle breezes from the west, they were detained here some days longer than they expected. All this time the ships were crowded with visitors, and surrounded by canoes; for none of them would quit the place till they departed. At length, on the 29th, at three o'clock in the afternoon, the wind came at east, and they weighed anchor. The ships being under sail, to oblige Otoo, and to gratify the curiosity of his peo-

ple, they fired seven guns; after which all their friends, except him and two or three more, took leave of them with such lively marks of sorrow and affection, as sufficiently testified how much they regretted their departure.

Captain Cook would not have quitted Otaheite so soon as he did, if he could have prevailed upon Omai to fix himself there. There was not even a probability of their being better supplied with provisions elsewhere even at the time of leaving it. Besides, such a friendship and confidence subsisted between them and the inhabitants, as could hardly be expected at any other place; and, it was rather extraordinary, had never been once interrupted, or suspended by any accident, or misunderstanding; nor had there been a theft committed worthy of notice.

When the Spanish vessels (which had some time before touched here) left the island, four Spaniards remained behind: two of whom were priests, one a servant, and the other was much caressed among the natives, who distinguished him by the name of Mateema. He seemed so far to have studied their language, as to have been able to speak it tolerably; and to have been indefatigable in impressing the minds of the islanders with exalted ideas of the greatness of the Spanish nation, and inducing them to think meanly of that of the English. With what design the priests remained, cannot easily be conceived. If it was their intention to convert the natives to the catholic faith, they certainly did not succeed. It did not appear, indeed, that they ever attempted it; for the natives said they never conversed with them, either on this, or any other subject. The priests resided the whole time in the house at Oheitepe-

ha; but Mateema roved about continually, visiting many parts of the island. After he and his companions had staid ten months, two ships arriving at Oheitepeha, took them aboard, and sailed again in five days.

On the 30th, at day-break, after leaving Otaheite, they stood for the N. end of the island of Eimeo. They were not without pilots, having several natives of Otaheite on board, and among them not a few women. Unwilling to rely entirely upon these guides, Captain Cook dispatched two boats to examine the harbour; when, on a signal being made for safe anchorage, they stood in with both the ships, and anchored in ten fathoms water. Taloo is the name of this harbour: it is on the north side of the island, and in the district of Oboonohoo, or Poonohoo. It runs above two miles between the hills, S. or S. by E. It is not inferior to any harbour that they met with in this ocean, both for security and goodness of bottom.

The harbour of Parowroah, on the same side of the island, is about two miles to the eastward, and is much larger within that of Taloo; but the opening in the reef lies to leeward of the harbour, and is considerably narrower. These striking defects must give the harbour of Taloo a decided preference. There are one or two more harbours on the south side of the island, but they are not so considerable as those already mentioned.

As soon as they had anchored, great numbers of the inhabitants came on board their ships, from mere motives of curiosity, for they brought nothing with them for the purposes of barter: but several canoes arrived, the next morning, from more distant parts, bringing with them an abundant supply of bread-fruit, cocoa-nuts, and a few hogs, which were exchanged for beads,

nails, and hatchets; red feathers not being so much demanded here as at Otaheite.

Early on the 2d of October, Captain Cook received a visit from Maheine, the chief of the island, who was accompanied by his wife. He approached the ship with as great caution and deliberation as if he apprehended mischief. Captain Cook made them presents of such articles as seemed most to strike their fancy; and, after staying about half an hour, they went on shore. They returned soon after with a large hog, meaning it as a return for the captain's favour; but he made them an additional present, to the full value of it; after which they went on board the Discovery, to visit Captain Clerke.

Maheine, supported with a few adherents, made himself, in some degree, independent of Otaheite. He was between forty and fifty years of age, and was bald-headed; which, at that age, is rather uncommon in these islands. He seemed ashamed of shewing his head, and wore a kind of turban to conceal it.

Towards the evening Captain Cook and Omai mounted on horseback, and rode along the shore. Omai having forbade the natives to follow them, their train was not very numerous; the fear of giving offence having got the better of their curiosity.

They had, in the day time, sent their goats ashore to graze, and, notwithstanding two men had been appointed to look after them, one of them had been stolen in the evening. This was a considerable loss, as it interfered with the captain's views of stocking other islands with these animals: he therefore was determined, if possible, to recover it. They received intelligence, the next morning, that it had been conveyed to Maheine,

who was at that time at Parowroah harbour. Two elderly men offered their services to conduct any of the gentlemen to him, in order to bring back the goat. Accordingly the captain dispatched some of his people in a boat, charged with a message to that chief, and insisted on both the goat and the thief being immediately given up. After much trouble it was recovered; in the interim, however, another, which was a female, and with kid, was taken away. The captain now proceeded to menaces, if she was not restored; whereupon he destroyed several canoes, which had the desired effect.

Their intercourse with the natives was renewed the next morning, several canoes bringing bread-fruit and cocoa-nuts to the ships to barter; whence it was natural to conclude that they were conscious they had merited the treatment they had received; and that, the cause of Captain Cook's displeasure being now removed, they apprehended no further mischief. They weighed with a breeze down the harbour about nine, but it was so faint and variable, that they did not get out to sea till noon, when they steered for Huaheine, Omai attending in his canoe.

At Eimeo the ships were abundantly supplied with fire-wood. They did not supply themselves with this article at Otaheite, as there is not a tree at Matavai but what is useful to the inhabitants. They also received here a large supply of refreshments in hogs, bread-fruit, and cocoa nuts.

There is very little difference between the produce of this island and that of Otaheite; but the difference in their women is remarkable. Those of Eimeo have a dark hue, are low in stature, and have forbidding features.

On the 12th, the day after they left Eimeo, they saw Huaheine, extending from S. W. by W. to W. by N. At twelve o'clock they anchored at the northern entrance of Owharre harbour, situated on the west side of the island Omai, in his canoe, entered the harbour just before them, but did not land. Though many of his countrymen crouded to see him, he did not take much notice of them. Great numbers also came off to the ships, insomuch that they were greatly incommoded by them.

The next morning all the principal people of the island visited them. This was just what the captain wished, as it was now high time to settle Omai; and he supposed that the presence of these chiefs would enable him to effect it in a satisfactory manner. Omai now seemed inclined to establish himself at Ulietea; and if he and Captain Cook could have agreed with respect to the mode of accomplishing that design, the latter would have consented to adopt it. His father had been deprived by the inhabitants of Bolabola, when they subdued Ulietea, of some land in that island; and the captain hoped he should be able to get it restored to the son without difficulty. For this purpose, it was necessary that Omai should be upon amicable terms with those who had become masters of the island; but he would not listen to any such proposal, and was vain enough to imagine that the captain would make use of force to reinstate him in his forfeited lands. This preventing his being fixed at Ulietea, the captain began to consider Huaheine as the more proper place, and therefore determined to avail himself of the presence of the chief men of that island, and propose the affair to them.

The captain now prepared to make a formal visit to Taireetareea, the king of the island, with a view of introducing this business. Omai, who was to accompany him, dressed himself very properly on the occasion, and provided a handsome present for the chief himself, and another for his Eatooa. Their landing drew most of the visitors from their ships, who, with many others, assembled in a large house. The concourse of people became very great, the major part of whom seemed stouter and fairer than those of Otaheite, and the number of men who appeared to be of consequence was also much greater, in proportion to the extent of the island. The captain waited some time for Taireetareea; but when the chief appeared, he found that his presence might easily have been dispensed with, as he did not exceed ten years of age. Omai began by making his offering to the gods, which consisted of cloth, feathers, &c. Another offering succeeded, which was to be given to the gods by the young chief; and after that several other tufts of red feathers were presented. The different articles were laid before a priest, being each of them delivered with a kind of prayer, which was spoken by one of Omai's friends, though in a great measure dictated by himself. In these prayers he did not forget his friends in England, nor those who had conducted him safe back to his native country. The Earee rahie no Pretane (king of Great Britain), the Earl of Sandwich, Toote, Tatee, (Cook and Clerke), were mentioned in every one of them. These offerings and prayers being ended, the priest took each of the articles in order, and after repeating a prayer, sent every one to the morai.

These religious rites having been performed, Omai seated himself by the captain, who bestowed a present on the young chief, and received another in return. The establishment of Omai was now proposed to the chiefs who were assembled. Omai informed them, that the English had conveyed him into their country, where he was well received by the great king and his Earees, (chiefs, or nobles), and treated during his whole stay with all the marks of regard and affection; that he had been brought back again, after having been enriched by their generosity, with a variety of articles, which would be highly beneficial to his countrymen; and that, besides the two horses which were to continue with him, many other new and useful animals had been left at Otaheite, which would speedily multiply, and furnish a sufficient number for the use of all the neighbouring islands. He then gave them to understand, that it was Captain Cook's earnest request, that they would give his friend a piece of land, upon which he might build a house, and raise provisions for himself and servants; adding, that if he could not obtain this at Huaheine, either by donation or purchase, the captain was resolved to carry him to Ulietea, and establish him there.

One of the chiefs said, "that the whole island of Huaheine, and whatever it contained, were Captain Cook's; and that, consequently, he might dispose of what portion he pleased to his friend." Omai was pleased at hearing this; thinking that he would be very liberal, and give him what was perfectly sufficient. But to make an offer of what it would have been improper to accept, the captain considered as offering nothing; and therefore desired that they would mark out the particular spot, and likewise the exact quantity of

land, which they intended to allot for the settlement. Upon this, some chiefs, who had already retired from the assembly, were sent for; and, after a short consultation, the captain's request was unanimously granted, and the ground immediately fixed upon, adjoining to the house where the present meeting was held. It extended along the shore of the harbour, about two hundred yards; its depth to the bottom of the hill was somewhat more; and a proportional part of the hill was comprehended in the grant. This affair being settled, a tent was pitched on shore, a post established, and the observatories erected. The carpenters of each ship were also now set to work in building a small house for Omai, in which he might secure the various European commodities that he had in his possession; at the same time other hands were employed in making a garden for his use, planting vines, shaddocks, melons, pine apples, and the seeds of other vegetable articles.

Omai now began to pay a serious attention to his own affairs, and heartily repented of his ill-judged prodigality at Otaheite. He found at Huaheine a brother, a sister, and a brother-in-law, the sister having been married. But these did not plunder him, as his other relations had lately done. It appeared, however, that though they had too much honesty and good-nature to do him any injury, they were of too little consequence in the island to do him any real services, having neither authority nor influence to protect his property or his person. Thus circumstanced, he ran great risk of being stripped of every thing he had received as soon as his English friends had left him.

As the most likely means of preventing this, Captain Cook advised him to distribute some of his moveables

among two or three of the principal chiefs; who, on being thus gratified themselves, might be induced to favour him with their patronage, and shield him from the injuries of others; which advice he promised to follow.

While they remained in this harbour they carried the bread on shore, to clear it of vermin. The number of cock-roaches that infested the ship at this time was almost incredible. The damage they sustained from them was very considerable: and every attempt to destroy them proved fruitless.

The intercourse of trade and friendly offices, between our navigators and the inhabitants of Huaheine, was undisturbed by any accident till the evening of the 22d, when one of the natives found means to get into Mr. Bayley's observatory, and carry off a sextant unobserved. Captain Cook was no sooner informed of this theft than he went ashore, and desired Omai to apply to the chiefs to procure restitution. He accordingly made application to them, but they took no steps towards recovering the instrument, being more attentive to a heeva, that was then exhibiting, till the captain ordered the performers to desist. Being now convinced that he was in earnest, they began to make some enquiry after the delinquent, who was sitting in the midst of them, with such marks of unconcern, that the captain was in great doubt of his being guilty, particularly as he denied it. Omai, however, assuring him that he was the person, he was sent on board the ship, and there confined. This raised an universal ferment among the assembled islanders, and the whole body fled with precipitation. The prisoner being examined by Omai, was with some difficulty brought to confess where he had concealed the sextant, and it was brought back, unhurt, the next

morning. After this the natives recovered from their consternation, and began to gather about as usual. As the thief appeared to be a shameless villain, Captain Cook punished him with greater severity than he had ever done any former culprit. Besides having his head and beard shaved, he commanded that both his ears should be cut off, and then dismissed.

This punishment, however, did not deter him from committing other offences; for, early in the morning of the 25th, a general alarm was spread, occasioned, as was reported, by one of the goats being stolen by this very man, who was a native of Bolabola; and though, upon examination, they found every thing safe in that quarter, yet it appeared that he had destroyed and carried off from Omai's ground several vines and cabbage-plants, and he publicly threatened to put him to death, and set fire to his house, as soon as the captain quitted the place. To prevent his doing any further mischief, Captain Cook ordered him to be seized, and confined again on board the ship, with a view of carrying him off the island; and this intention seemed to give general satisfaction to all the chiefs.

Omai's house being now almost finished, many of his moveables were carried on shore on the 26th; amongst other articles was a box of toys, which greatly pleased the gazing multitude. But, as to his plates, dishes, drinking mugs, glasses, pots, kettles, and the whole train of domestic apparatus, scarce one of his countrymen would even look at them. Omai himself began to think that they would be of no service to him; that a baked hog was more savory eating than a boiled one; that a plantain leaf made as good a plate or dish as pewter; and that a cocoa-nut shell was as convenient a gob-

success. The next day Captain Cook applied to the chief concerning this affair, who promised to send a party of the islanders after the fugitive, and gave them hopes that he should be brought back in the course of that day. This, however, did not happen, and they had reason to imagine that the chief had taken no steps towards finding him. Having at length heard that he was at a place called Hamoa, situated on the other side of the island, Captain Cook repaired thither with two armed boats, attended by a native. In their way they met with the chief, who also embarked with them. The captain, with a few of his men, landing about a mile and a half from the spot, marched up to it with great expedition, lest the sight of the boats should give the alarm, and allow the offender sufficient time to make his escape to the mountains. This precaution proved unnecessary; for the natives of that part of the island having obtained information of the captain's approach, were prepared to deliver up the fugitive. He was found, with his musquet lying before him, seated betwixt two women, who, the instant that the captain entered the house, rose up to plead in his vindication. As such proceedings deserved to be discouraged, the captain, with a stern look, bade them begone; upon which they burst into tears and retired. Paha, the chief of that district, now came with a sucking-pig and a plantain tree, which he was on the point of presenting to Captain Cook as a peace-offering, who rejected it, and having ordered the chief to quit his presence, embarked with Harrison in one of the boats, and returned to the ships. After this, harmony was speedily restored. The delinquent made no other excuse for his conduct than that the natives enticed him away; which perhaps was

in a great measure true, as Paha, and the two women above-mentioned, had been at the ship the day before his desertion. As he had remained at his station till within a few minutes of the time in which he was to have been relieved by another, the punishment he received was not very severe.

About a fortnight after they had arrived at Ulietea, Omai dispatched two of his people in a canoe, with intelligence that he continued undisturbed by the inhabitants of Huaheine, and that every thing succeeded with him except that his goat had died in kidding. This information was accompanied with a request that Captain Cook would send him another goat, and also two axes. Pleased with this additional opportunity of serving his friend, the captain sent back the messengers to Huaheine on the 18th, with the axes and a male and female kid.

On the 24th Captain Cook was informed that two of the Discovery's people, one of whom was a midshipman, were missing. Not long after, they learned from the natives that they had embarked in a canoe the preceding night, and were now at the other end of the island. As the midshipman had expressed a desire of continuing at one of these islands, it was extremely probable that he and his companion had gone off with that intent; Captain Clerke therefore, with two armed boats and a detachment of marines, set out in quest of the fugitives, but returned in the evening without success. From the conduct of the islanders, he was of opinion that they intended to conceal the deserters; and, with this view, had deceived him with false information, directing him to seek for them where they could not be found. He was not mistaken; for, the next morning,

intelligence was brought that the two runaways were in the isle of Otaha. These not being the only persons in the ships who were desirous of remaining at these favourite islands, it was necessary, in order to give an effectual discouragement to any further desertion, to recover them at all events. Captain Cook therefore determined to go in pursuit of them himself, having observed that the natives seldom attempted to amuse him with false information. He accordingly set out with two armed boats, accompanied by Oreo himself. They proceeded, without stopping at any place, till they came to the eastern side of Otaha, where they put ashore; and the chief dispatched a man before them, with orders to seize the fugitives, and keep them till the captain and his attendants should arrive with the boats. But when they had got to the place where they expected to find them, they were informed that they had quitted this island, and had gone to Bolabola the preceding day. The captain, not chusing to follow them thither, returned to the ships, with a full determination to have recourse to a measure, which, he had reason to believe, would compel the natives to restore them.

Very early on the 26th, soon after break of day, Oreo, with his son, daughter, and son-in-law, having come on board the Resolution, Captain Cook resolved to detain the three last till the deserters should be delivered up. With this view, Captain Clerke invited them on board his ship; and, as soon as they arrived in the cabin, a sentinel was placed at the door, and the window secured. This proceeding greatly surprized them; and Captain Clerke having explained the reason of it, they burst into tears, and begged he would not kill them. He assured them he would not, and that the moment his peo-

ple were brought back they should be released. This, however, did not remove their uneasiness, and they bewailed their fate in silent sorrow. The chief being with Captain Cook when he received intelligence of this affair, immediately mentioned it to him, imagining that this step had been taken without his knowledge and approbation. The captain instantly undeceived him; and then he began to entertain apprehensions with respect to his own situation, and his countenance indicated the greatest perturbation of mind. But the captain soon quieted his fears, by telling him that he was at liberty to quit the ship whenever he chose, and to take such steps towards the recovery of the two men as he should judge best calculated for that purpose; and that, if he should meet with success, his friends on board the Discovery should be released from their confinement: if not, that they should certainly be carried away.

The chief now dispatched a canoe to Bolabola, with a message to Opoony, king of that island, informing him of what had happened, and requesting him to seize the two deserters and send them back. The messenger, who was the father of Oreo's son-in-law Pootoe, came to receive Captain Cook's commands before his departure; who strictly enjoined him not to return without the fugitives, and to tell Opoony, from him, that if they had left the isle of Bolabola, he must send canoes in pursuit of them.

The impatient natives, not thinking proper to trust to the return of the deserters for the release of the prisoners, were induced to meditate an attempt, which, if it had not been prevented, might have involved them in still greater distress. Between five and six o'clock, Captain Cook, who was then on shore abreast of the ship,

observed that all their canoes, in and about the harbour, began to move off. He enquired, in vain, for the cause of this, till the sailors, calling to them from the Discovery, informed them that the islanders had seized Captain Clerke and Mr. Gore as they were walking at a small distance from the ships. Captain Cook, struck with the boldness of this scheme of retaliation, which seemed to counteract him in his own way, instantly commanded his people to arm; and, in a few minutes, a strong party, under the command of Mr. King, was sent to the rescue of the two gentlemen. Two armed boats, and a party under Mr. Williamson, were dispatched at the same time, to intercept the flying canoes in their retreat to the shore. These detachments had scarcely gone out of sight when intelligence arrived that the gentlemen had been misinformed; upon which they were immediately called in. It manifestly appeared, however, from several corroborating particulars, that the natives had actually formed the design of seizing Captain Clerke; and they even made no secret in speaking of it the following day. But the principal part of their plan of operations was to have laid hold of the person of Captain Cook. He was accustomed to bathe every evening in the fresh water; on which occasions he frequently went alone, and always unarmed. Expecting him to go this evening as usual, they had resolved upon seizing him, and Captain Clerke likewise, if he had accompanied him. But Captain Cook, after confining the chief's family, had taken care to avoid putting himself in their power; and had cautioned Captain Clerke and the officers not to go to any considerable distance from the ships. Oreo, in the course of the afternoon, asked Captain Cook three or four times

if he would not go to the bathing-place; till at length, finding that he could not be prevailed upon, he retired, with his people, notwithstanding all entreaties to the contrary. Having no suspicion at this time of their design, Captain Cook imagined that a sudden panic had seized them, which would probably soon be over. Being disappointed with respect to him, they fixed upon those who were more in their power. It was a fortunate circumstance that they did not succeed in their design, and that no mischief was done on the occasion, no musquets being fired, except two or three to stop the canoes; to which firing, perhaps, Captain Clerke and Mr. Gore owed their safety; for, at that moment, a party of the islanders, armed with clubs, were marching towards them, but dispersed on hearing the report of the musquets.

No account of the two fugitives having been received from Bolabola, Oreo now set out for that island, desiring Captain Cook to follow him the next day with the ships. This was the captain's intention; but the wind prevented their getting out to sea. The same wind, however, which detained them in the harbour, brought back Oreo, with the two deserters, from Bolabola. They had reached Otaha on the night of their desertion; but being unable, for the want of wind, to get to any of the islands lying to the eastward, as they at first intended, they had proceeded to Bolabola, and thence to a little island called Toobaee, where they were apprehended by Pootoe's father. As soon as they were brought on board, the three prisoners in the Discovery were restored to their liberty. Such was the termination of an affair which had given the captain much trouble and vexation.

The wind continuing constantly between the north and west, kept them in the harbour till Sunday the 7th of December; when, at eight o'clock in the morning, they weighed and made sail, with a light breeze at the N. E. point, and, with the assistance of the boats, got out to sea.

Having now taken their leave of Ulietea, they steered for Bolabola. Their principal reason for visiting this island was to procure one of the anchors which had been lost at Otaheite by Monsieur de Bougainville. This, they were informed, had been afterwards found by the natives there, and sent by them to Opoony, the chief of Bolabola. The captain wanted it to fabricate hatchets, &c. for trading, as iron was now scarce. Oreo, accompanied by six or eight others, took a passage with them. At sun-set, being off the south point of Bolabola, they shortened sail, and passed the night making short boards. On the 8th they made sail for the harbour on the west side of the island. The wind being scant, it was nine o'clock before they were near enough to send away a boat to sound the entrance. The master when he returned with the boat, reported that the entrance of the harbour was rocky at the bottom, but that there was good ground within, and the depth of water 25 and 27 fathoms; and that there was room to turn the ships in. Upon this information they attempted to work the ships in; but, the wind and tide being against them, they made two or three trips, and found it could not be accomplished till the tide should turn in their favour. Whereupon Captain Cook gave up the design of carrying the ships into the harbour, and embarking in one of the boats, attended by Oreo and his companions, was rowed in for the island.

As soon as they were got ashore, the commodore was introduced to Opoony, surrounded by a vast concourse of people. The necessary formality of compliments being over, he requested the chief to give him the anchor; and, to induce him to comply with the request, produced the present he intended for him. It consisted of a linen night-gown, some gauze handkerchiefs, a shirt, a looking-glass, some beads and toys, and six axes. Opoony, however, refused to accept the present till the captain had received the anchor; and ordered three persons to go and deliver it to him; with directions to receive from him what he thought proper in return. With these messengers they set out in their boats for a neighbouring island, where the anchor had been deposited; but it was neither so large nor so perfect as they expected. By the mark that was upon it, they found that it had originally weighed seven hundred pounds; but it now wanted the two palms, the ring, and part of the shank. Captain Cook, notwithstanding, took the anchor as he found it, and sent the whole of the present which he at first intended. This negociation being completed, the captain returned on board, hoisted in the boats, and made sail to the north. But, while they were hoisting in the boats, they were visited by some of the natives, who came off in three or four canoes to see the ships. They brought with them one pig and a few cocoa-nuts.

Oteavanooa, the harbour of Bolabola, situated on the west side of the island, is very capacious. Towards the middle of this island is a lofty double-peaked mountain, which appeared to be barren on the east side, but on the west side has some trees or bushes. The lower grounds, towards the sea, like the other islands of this ocean, are

covered with cocoa-palms and bread-fruit trees. There are many little islands that surround it, which add to the number of its inhabitants, and to the amount of its vegetable productions.

Considering the small extent of Bolabola, it being only eight leagues in circumference, it is remarkable that its people should have been able to conquer Ulietea and Otaha, the former of which islands is, alone, more than double its size. Since these conquests, the Bolabola men are considered as invincible; and their fame is so far extended, that, even at Otaheite, if not dreaded, they are respected for their valour. It is asserted that they never fly from an enemy, and that they always are victorious against an equal number of the other islanders.

As they already possessed a ram, brought to Otaheite by the Spaniards, Captain Cook carried an ewe ashore, of the Cape of Good Hope breed, by which he has probably laid the foundation for a breed of sheep at Bolabola. He also left with Oreo, at Ulietea, two goats, and an English boar and sow; so that the race of hogs will be considerably improved in a few years at Otaheite, and all the neighbouring islands; and they will, perhaps, be stocked with many valuable European animals.

The south-east part of Otaheite affords one of the most luxuriant prospects in the universe. The hills are high, steep, and craggy; but they are covered to the very summits with trees and shrubs; the rocks seeming to possess the property of producing their verdant clothing. The lower land and vallies teem with various productions, that grow with exuberant vigour, and convey to the minds of the beholders an idea that no

country upon earth can vie with this in the strength and beauty of vegetation: nature has been equally liberal in distributing rivulets, which glide through every valley, dividing, as they approach the sea, into several branches, fertilizing the lands through which they run.

The habitations of the natives are irregularly scattered upon the flat land, and many of them, along the shore, afforded a delightful scene from the ships; especially as the sea within the reef is perfectly still, and affords at all times a safe navigation for the inhabitants, who are often seen passing and repassing in their canoes. The natural fertility of the country, combined with the mildness and serenity of the climate, has rendered the natives so careless in their cultivation, that the smallest traces of it cannot, in many places, be discovered, though overflowing with the richest productions. The cloth plant, and the ava, or intoxicating pepper, are almost the only things to which they shew any attention. The bread-fruit tree is never planted, but springs from the roots of the old ones, which spread themselves near the surface of the ground. The principal trees are the cocoa-nut and plantain; the first of which requires no attention after it appears a foot or two above the ground, but the plantain requires some care in the cultivation; for, about three months after it shoots up, it begins to bear fruit, during which time it puts forth young shoots, which supply a succession of fruit, the old stocks being cut down as the fruit is taken off.

The products of the island are more remarkable for their great abundance than for their variety; and curiosities here are not very numerous. Among these may be reckoned a large lake of fresh water, on the top of

one of the highest mountains, at the distance of almost two days' journey. It is remarkable for its depth, and abounds with eels of an enormous size. This is esteemed the greatest natural curiosity of the country. There is also a small pond of water on this island, which has a yellow sediment at the bottom. It has the appearance of being very good, but has an offensive taste, and often proves fatal to those who drink a quantity of it; and those who bathe in it break out in blotches.

On the arrival of our navigators, they were struck with the remarkable contrast between the inhabitants of Tongataboo, and those of Otaheite; the former being of a robust make, and dark colour, and the latter having a distinguished delicacy and whiteness. That difference, however, did not immediately preponderate in favour of the Otaheiteans; and, when it did, it was, perhaps, occasioned more by their being accustomed to them; the marks which had recommended the others beginning now to be forgotten. The women, however, of Otaheite, possess all those delicate characteristics which in many countries distinguish them from the other sex. The men wear their beards long here, and their hair considerably longer than at Tongataboo, which gave them a very different appearance. The Otaheiteans are timid and fickle. They are not so muscular and robust as the Friendly Islanders, arising, perhaps, from their being accustomed to less action; the superior fertility of their country enabling them to lead a more indolent life. They have a plumpness and smoothness of the skin; which, though more consonant with our ideas of beauty, is far from being an advantage; and is attended with a kind of languor in all their motions. This is visible in their boxing and wrestling,

which display only the feeble efforts of children, if compared to the vigour and activity with which such exercises are performed at the Friendly Islands.

Nine-tenths, at least, of their common diet, consist of vegetable food. To this temperate course of life may, perhaps, be attributed their having so few diseases among them. They show an openness and generosity of disposition upon all occasions. Disposed, as they naturally are, to direct their aims to what will afford them ease or pleasure, their amusements are various; they are greatly delighted with songs, and are immoderately fond of music.

Though the language of Otaheite seems radically the same as that of New-Zealand and the Friendly Islands, it has not that guttural pronunciation, and is pruned of some of the consonants, with which those dialects abound; which has rendered it, like the manners of the inhabitants, soft and soothing. It abounds with beautiful and figurative expressions, and is so copious, that they have above twenty different names for the bread-fruit; as many for the taro-root, and half that number for the cocoa-nut.

A famine frequently happens in this island, notwithstanding its extreme fertility, in which many people are said to perish. In a scarcity of provision, when their yams and bread-fruit are consumed, they have recourse to various roots which grow uncultivated upon the mountains. A very small portion of animal food is enjoyed by the lower class of people; and if, at any time they obtain any, it is either fish, sea-eggs, or other marine productions; for pork hardly ever falls to their share. Only the Eree de hoi, or Eree rahie, is able to afford pork every day; and the inferior chiefs, according to

their riches, perhaps once a week, a fortnight, or a month.

The ava is chiefly used among the better sort of people, but this beverage is differently prepared from that which our navigators saw in the Friendly Islands. Here they pour a small quantity of water upon the root, and often bake, roast, or bruise the stalks, without chewing it before it is infused. They also bruise the leaves of the plant here, and pour water upon them as upon the root. It is not drank in large companies, in that sociable way which is practised among the people at Tongataboo; but it has more pernicious effects here, owing, perhaps, to the manner of preparing it; as frequent instances of its intoxicating powers were seen.

Their meals at Otaheite are very frequent. The first is about two o'clock in the morning, after which they go to sleep; the next is at eight; they dine at eleven, and again (as Omai expressed it) at two, and at five; and they go to supper at eight. The women are not only obliged to eat by themselves, but are even excluded from partaking of most of the better sorts of food. The children of both sexes also eat apart; and the women usually serve up their own provisions.

When a young man and woman, from mutual choice, agree to cohabit, the man makes a present to the father of the girl of the common necessaries of life, as hogs, cloth, or canoes; and if he supposes he has not received a valuable consideration for his daughter, he compels her to leave her former friend, and to cohabit with a person who may be more liberal. The man, indeed, is always at full liberty to make a new choice; or, should his consort become a mother, he may destroy the child, and afterwards either leave the woman, or continue his

connection with her. But if he adopt the child, and permit it to live, the man and woman are then considered as in the married state; and after that they seldom separate. A man may, however, without being censured, join a more youthful partner to his first wife, and live with both of them.

The erreoes, or those of the better sort, who possess the means of purchasing a succession of fresh connections, are generally roaming about; and, having no particular attachment, seldom adopt the plan of a settled cohabitation. And this licentious plan of life is so agreeable to their disposition, that the most beautiful of both sexes exhaust their youthful days in practices which would disgrace the most savage tribes. These enormities are peculiarly shocking in a country whose general character has, in other respects, evident traces of the prevalence of humane feelings. When an erreoe woman brings forth a child, it is suffocated by applying a cloth to its mouth and nose, which has been previously dipped in water.

It is extremely common to see the men beat the women most unmercifully; and unless this behaviour proceeds from jealousy, which both sexes sometimes pretend to be infected with, it will be difficult to assign a reason for it.

Their religious system abounds in singularities, and few of the common people have a competent knowledge of it, that being principally confined to their priests, who indeed are numerous. They pay no particular respect to one god, as possessing pre-eminence; but believe in a plurality of divinities, who have each a plenitude of power. Their assiduity in serving their gods is remarkably conspicuous. The whattas, or of-

fering-places of the morais, are, in general, loaded with fruits and animals; and almost every house has a portion of it set apart for a similar purpose. Many of them are so rigidly scrupulous in their religious matters, that they will not even begin a meal till they have laid aside a morsel for the eatooa.

As to the soul, they believe it to be both immortal and immaterial; that during the pangs of death it keeps fluttering about the lips, and that it ascends, and is eaten by the deity: that it continues in this state for some time; after which it takes its passage to a certain place, destined to receive the souls of men, and has existence in eternal night; or rather in a kind of dawn, or twilight. They expect no permanent punishment hereafter for crimes committed upon earth; the souls of good and bad men being indiscriminately eaten by the deity. They believe that those who refrain from all sensual connexion with women some months before they depart this life, pass into their eternal mansion.

Many of their notions respecting the deity are extravagantly absurd. They suppose him to be under the influence of those spirits who derive their existence from him; and that they frequently eat him, though he has power to recreate himself. When the moon is on its wane, they are supposed to be devouring their eatooa; and, in the proportion that it increases, he is renewing himself.

They have strange obscure traditions concerning the creation. Some goddess, they say, had a lump of earth suspended in a cord, and, by giving it a swing round, scattered about several pieces of land, which constituted Otaheite and the adjacent islands; and that they were all peopled by one of each sex, who originally fixed at

Otaheite; but this only respects their own immediate creation; for they admit of an universal one before this.

The principal characteristics of the sovereign are, the being invested with the maro, the presiding at human sacrifices, and the blowing of the conch-shell. On hearing the latter, every subject is obliged to bring food, in proportion to his circumstances, to his royal residence. Their veneration for his name, on some occasions, they carry to a most extravagant height.

The people, exclusive of the Eree de hoi, and his family, are classed in the following order. The Erees, or powerful chiefs; the Manahoone, or vassals; and the Teou, or Toutou, servants, or slaves. The men, agreeably to the regular institution, connect themselves with women of their respective ranks; but if with one of an inferior class, and she brings forth a child, it is not only preserved, but is entitled to the rank of the father; unless he should happen to be an Eree, in which case the child is killed.

It is an established practice among them, that crimes which are not of a general nature, are left to be punished by the party who is injured, supposing that he will decide as equitably as a person totally unconcerned; and, long custom having allotted certain punishments for certain crimes, he may inflict them, without being amenable to any one. If, for instance, any person be detected stealing, which is usually done in the night, the owner of the goods stolen may kill the thief immediately. But they seldom inflict so severe a punishment, unless the property taken is very valuable; such as plaited hair and breast-plates. When only cloth or hogs are stolen, and the robber escapes, if, upon his being

afterwards discovered, he engages to return the same number of hogs, and pieces of cloth, he is acquitted of the offence; or, at most, receives a slight beating. If, in a quarrel, one person should kill another, the friends of the deceased attack the survivor and his adherents. If they are victorious, they take possession of the house and property of the other party; but, if they are vanquished, the reverse takes place.

After quitting Bolabola December the 8th, they steered to the northward, with the wind between N. E. and E. scarce ever having it in the S. E. point till after they had crossed the equator. Though a year and five months had now elapsed since their departure from England, during which period they had not been, upon the whole, unprofitably employed, Captain Cook was sensible that, with respect to the principal object of his instructions, their voyage might be considered, at this time, as only at its commencement; and, therefore, his attention to whatever might contribute towards their safety and final success, was now to be exerted as it were anew. He had with this view examined into the state of their provisions at the islands they had last visited; and having now, on leaving them, proceeded beyond the extent of the former discoveries, he ordered an accurate survey to be taken of all the stores that were in each ship, that, by being fully informed of the quantity and condition of every article, he might know how to use them to the greatest advantage.

Having crossed the equinoctial line, on the 24th they discovered land, bearing N. E. by E. It was found, upon their making nearer approach, to be one of those low islands which are so frequently met with in this ocean between the tropics; that is, a narrow bank of

land that encloses the sea within. They observed some cocoa-nut trees in two or three places; but the land in general had a very sterile aspect.

Captain Cook being of opinion that this island would prove a convenient place for procuring turtle, resolved to anchor here. They accordingly dropped their anchors in thirty fathoms water; and a boat was immediately dispatched to search for a commodious landing-place. When she returned, the officer who had been employed in this search reported, that he found no place where a boat could land; but that fish greatly abounded in the shoal-water, without the breakers. Early the next morning two boats were sent, one from each ship, to examine more accurately whether it was practicable to land; and at the same time two others were ordered out, to fish at a grappling near the shore. The last returned about eight, with as many fish as weighed upwards of two hundred pounds. Encouraged by this success, the captain dispatched them again after breakfast; and he then went himself, in another boat, to view the coast, and attempt landing, which, however, he found to be impracticable. The two boats which had been sent out on the same search, returned about twelve o'clock; and the master, who was in that belonging to the Resolution, reported to Captain Cook, that, about four or five miles to the northward, there being a break in the land, and a channel into the lagoon, there was, consequently, a place for landing; and that he had found off this entrance the same soundings as they had where they now were stationed. In consequence of this report they weighed, and after two or three trips anchored again, over a bottom of fine dark sand, before a little island lying at the entrance of the lagoon.

On the 27th, some of Captain Clerke's people having been on shore all night, had been so fortunate as to turn upwards of forty turtles on the sand, which were this day brought on board; and, in the course of the afternoon, a party which had been sent to the northward returned with half a dozen; and being sent back again, had, upon the whole, pretty good success. The day following Captain Cook, accompanied by Mr. Bayley, landed on the islands situated between the two channels into the lagoon, to prepare the telescopes for observing the solar eclipse that was to happen on the 30th: on which day Captain Cook and Messrs. King and Bayley repaired to a small island above mentioned, to observe it. The sky was overcast at times; but it was clear when the eclipse ended. In the afternoon, the party who had been employed in catching turtle at the south-eastern part of the island, returned on board, except a sailor belonging to Captain Clerke's ship, who had been missing for two days. At first there were two men who had lost their way, but happening to disagree with respect to the track that was most likely to bring them to their companions, they had separated; and one of them found means to rejoin the party, after an absence of twenty-four hours, during which he had experienced great distress.

Captain Clerke was no sooner informed that one of the stragglers was still in this disagreeable situation, than he dispatched a party in search of him; but neither the man nor the party having returned, the next morning Captain Cook ordered two boats into the lagoon, to prosecute the search by different tracks. In a short time after Captain Clerke's detachment returned, with their lost companion; in consequence of which the boats dis-

patched into the lagoon were called back by signal. This man's distress must have been far greater than that of the other straggler; not only as he had been lost a longer time, but as he was too delicate to drink turtle's blood, which the other did, as there was no water in the island.

Having some yams and cocoa-nuts on board, in a state of vegetation, they planted them, by Captain Cook's order, on the small island where they had observed the late eclipse; and some seeds of melons were sown in another place.

They procured at this island, for both ships, about three hundred turtles, which weighed, one with another, about ninety pounds; they were all of the green sort, and, perhaps, not inferior in goodness to any in the world. They also caught, with hook and line, a great quantity of fish, principally consisting of cavillies, snappers, and a few rock-fish of two species, one with whitish streaks scattered about, and the other with numerous blue spots.

The soil of this island, (to which Captain Cook gave the name of Christmas Island, as they kept that festival here) is, in some places, light and blackish, composed of sand, the dung of birds, and rotten vegetables. In other parts it is formed of broken coral-stones, decayed shells, and other marine productions. These are deposited in long, narrow ridges, lying parallel with the sea-coast; and must have been thrown up by the waves, though they do not reach, at present, within a mile of some of these places. It is between fifteen and twenty leagues in circuit. Its form is semi-circular, or like the moon in her last quarter, the two horns being the north and south points. The west side, or the small island

situate at the entrance into the lagoon, lies in the longitude of 202° 30′ E. and in the latitude of 1° 59 N. There were not the smallest traces of any human being having ever been there before our navigators.

Weighing anchor at day-break, on the 2d of January, 1788, they resumed their northerly course, with a gentle breeze at E. and E. S. E. They daily observed tropic birds, men of war birds, boobies, &c. and between the latitude 10° and 11′ N. saw several turtles, notwithstanding which, they discovered no land till early on the 18th, when an island appeared, bearing N. E. by E. Not long after more land was seen, which bore N. and was totally detached from the former. At noon the first was supposed to be eight or nine leagues distant. The next day, at sun-rise, the island first seen bore E. at the distance of several leagues. Not being able to reach this, they shaped their course for the other; and soon after observed a third island, bearing W. N. W. They had now a fine breeze at E. by N. and at noon the second island, named Atooi, for the east end of which they were steering, was about two leagues distant. As they made a nearer approach, many of the inhabitants put off from the shore in their canoes, and very readily came alongside the ships. They spoke a dialect of the Otaheitean language, but they could not be prevailed upon by any entreaties to come on board. Captain Cook tied some brass medals to a rope, which he gave to those who were on board the canoes; and they, in return, fastened some mackarel to the rope, by way of equivalent. This was repeated; and some small nails, or pieces of iron, were given them, for which they gave in exchange some more fish, and a sweet potatoe. These people did not exceed the or-

dinary size, and were stoutly made. Their complexion was brown; and though there appeared to be little difference in the casts of their colour, there was a considerable variation in their features. Most of them had their hair cropped rather short; a few had it tied in a bunch at the top of the head; and others suffered it to flow loose. It seemed to be naturally black; but the generality of them had stained it with some stuff which communicated to it a brownish colour. Most of them had pretty long beards. They had no ornaments about their persons, nor were their ears perforated. Some of them were tatooed on the hands, or near the groin; and the pieces of cloth, which were worn by them round their middle, were curiously coloured with white, black, and red. They seemed to be mild and good-natured; and were furnished with no arms of any kind, except some small stones, which they had manifestly brought for their own defence; and these they threw into the sea when they found that there was no occasion for them.

Seeing no signs of an anchoring-place at this eastern extremity of the island, they bore away to leeward, and ranged along the S. E. side, at the distance of about a mile from the shore. The canoes left them when they made sail; but others came off as they proceeded along the coast, and brought with them pigs and some excellent potatoes, which they exchanged for whatever were offered to them; and several pigs were purchased for a sixpenny nail. They passed divers villages, the inhabitants of all of them came in crowds to the shore, and assembled on the elevated places to take a view of the ships. The next morning they stood in for the land, and were met by several canoes filled with natives, some

of whom ventured to come on board. None of the inhabitants our navigators ever met with before in any other island or country, were so astonished as these people were, upon entering a ship. Their eyes were incessantly roving from one object to another, and the wildness of their looks and gestures fully indicated their perfect ignorance with respect to every thing they saw; and strongly marked that they had never, till the present time, been visited by Europeans, nor been acquainted with any English commodities, except iron. This metal, however, they had in all probability only heard of, or had perhaps known it in some inconsiderable quantity, brought to them at a remote period. They asked for it by the appellation of hamaite, referring probably to some instrument, in making which iron could be serviceably employed; for they applied that name to the blade of a knife, though they had no idea of that particular instrument, which they could not even handle properly. They also frequently called iron by the name of toe, which signifies a hatchet, or adze. On seeing some beads, they first asked what they were; and then, whether they were to be eaten. But, on their being informed that they were to be hung in their ears, they rejected them as useless. They were equally indifferent with regard to a looking-glass that was offered them, and returned it for a similar reason. China cups, plates of earthern ware, and other things of that kind, were so new to them, that they asked whether they were made of wood. They were, in many respects, naturally polite; or, at least, cautious of giving offence. Some of them, just before their venturing on board, repeated a long prayer; and others, afterwards, sung and made various motions with their hands.

On their first entering the ships, they attempted to steal every thing that they could lay their hands on, or rather to take it openly; but when they observed that a watchful eye was kept over them, they became less active in appropriating to themselves what did not belong to them.

About nine o'clock Captain Cook dispatched Lieutenant Williamson, with three armed boats, to look out for a proper landing-place, and for fresh water; with orders, that if he should find it necessary to land in search of the latter, he should not allow more than one man to accompany him out of the boats; this was to prevent, if possible, the importation of a dangerous disease into this island, which he knew some of his people now laboured under, and which they unfortunately had already communicated to other islands in this ocean.

Towards mid-day Mr. Williamson came back, and reported, that he had observed behind a beach, near one of the villages, a large pond, which was said by the natives to contain fresh water; and that there was tolerable anchoring-ground before it. He also mentioned, that he had made an attempt to land in another place, but was prevented by the islanders, who, coming down in great numbers to the boats, endeavoured to take away the oars, musquets, and every other article which they could lay hold of; and crowded so thick upon him and his people, that he was under the necessity of firing, by which one man was killed. This unfortunate circumstance, however, was not known to Captain Cook till after they had quitted the island; so that all his measures were directed as if no affair of that kind had happened.

Between three and four in the afternoon the captain went ashore, with three armed boats, and twelve of the marines, with a view of examining the water, and trying the disposition of the inhabitants, who had assembled in considerable numbers on a sandy beach before the village; behind it was a valley, in which was the piece of water. The moment he leaped on shore, all the islanders fell prostrate upon their faces, and continued in that posture of humiliation, till, by signs, he prevailed on them to rise. They then presented to him many small pigs, with plantain-trees, making use of nearly the same ceremonies which had been practised, on similar occasions, at the Society and other isles; and a long oration, or prayer, being pronounced by an individual, in which others of the assembly occasionally joined. Captain Cook signified his acceptance of their proffered friendship, by bestowing on them, in return, such presents as he had brought ashore. This introductory business being ended, he stationed a guard upon the beach, and was then conducted by some of the natives to the water, which he found extremely good, and so considerable, that it might be denominated a lake. After this he returned on board, and issued orders that preparations should be made for filling the water-casks in the morning; at which time he went ashore with some of his people, having a party of marines for a guard.

They had no sooner landed, than a trade was entered into for potatoes and hogs, which the islanders gave in exchange for nails and pieces of iron. Far from giving any obstruction to the men who were occupied in watering, they even assisted them in rolling the casks to and from the pool, and performed with alacrity whatever

was required of them. Captain Cook, leaving the command at this station to Mr. Williamson, who had landed with him, made an excursion into the country, up the valley, being accompanied by Messrs. Anderson and Webber, and followed by a numerous train of natives, one of whom, who had been very active in keeping the others in order, the captain made choice of as a guide. This man, from time to time, proclaiming the approach of the gentlemen, every person who met them fell prostrate on the ground, and remained in that humble position till they had passed. This, as they were afterwards informed, is the method of shewing respect to their own great chiefs.

As they ranged along the coast in the ships, they had observed at every village one or more elevated white objects, resembling pyramids, or rather obelisks; one of which, supposed by Captain Cook to be at least fifty feet in height, was very conspicuous from their anchoring station, and seemed to be at a small distance up this valley. To have a nearer view of it, was the principal motive of the gentlemen's walk. Their guide was acquainted with their desire of being conducted to it; but it happened to be in such a situation, that they could not get at it, the pool of water separating it from them. However, as there was another of the same kind about half a mile distant, upon their side of the valley, they set out to visit that. As soon as they reached it, they perceived that it was situate in a burying-ground, or morai, which bore a striking resemblance, in several respects, to those they had seen at Otaheite and other islands in this ocean. The various parts also which composed it were called by the same names. Of course, the gentlemen entertained little doubt in their minds,

that the similarity existed also in the rites here solemnized, and particularly in the horrid oblation of human victims. Their suspicions were soon confirmed; for, on one side of the entrance into the hemannaa, they observed a small square place, and another still smaller; and, on asking what these were, they were informed by their conductor, that in one of them was interred a man who had been sacrificed; and in the other a hog, which had also been offered to the deity.

After they had carefully examined whatever was worthy of notice about the morai, and of the surrounding country, they returned by a different route. They found a multitude of people collected at the beach, and a brisk trade for fowls, pigs, and vegetables, going on there, with the greatest order and decorum. At noon, Captain Cook went on board to dinner, and then sent Mr. King to take the command of the party on shore. During the afternoon he landed again, accompanied by Captain Clerke, intending to make another excursion up the country; but, before he could execute this design, the day was too far advanced; he therefore relinquished his intention for the present, and no other opportunity afterwards occurred. In the course of this day they procured nine tons of water, and (principally by exchanging nails and pieces of iron) seventy or eighty pigs, some fowls, plantains, potatoes, and taro roots. In this commercial intercourse, the islanders deserved their best commendations, making no attempts to cheat them, either alongside the ships, or on shore. Among the various articles which they brought to barter this day, was a sort of cloak and cap, which, even in more polished countries, might be esteemed elegant. The cloaks were nearly of the shape and size of the

short ones worn by the men in Spain, and by the women in England, tied loosely before, and reaching to the middle of the back. Its ground is a net-work, with the most beautiful red and yellow feathers so closely fixed upon it, that the surface, both in point of smoothness and glossiness, resembles the richest velvet.

The cap was made in the form of a helmet, with the middle part, or crest, frequently of a hand's breadth. It sits very close upon the head, and has notches to admit the ears. It consists of twigs and osiers, covered with a net-work, into which feathers are wrought, as upon the cloak, but somewhat closer, and less diversified; the major part being red, with some yellow, green, or black stripes, on the sides. These caps, in all probability, complete the dress with the cloaks; for the islanders appeared sometimes in both together. Our navigators could not conjecture from whence they obtained such a quantity of those beautiful feathers; but they soon procured intelligence respecting one sort, for they afterwards brought for sale great numbers of skins of a small red species of birds, frequently tied up in bunches of twenty or upwards, or having a wooden skewer run through them.

On the 24th they had almost continual rain for the whole morning. The natives, notwithstanding the surf, ventured out in their canoes, bringing off to the ships hogs and vegetables, which they exchanged as before. One of their number, who offered some fish-hooks for sale, was observed to have a very small parcel fastened to the string of one of them, which he carefully separated, and reserved for himself, when he disposed of the hook. When asked what it was, he pointed to his belly,

and intimated something of its being dead; saying at the same time that it was bad. He was requested to open the parcel, which he did with great reluctance; and it contained a small thin piece of flesh, which had to all appearance been dried, but was at present wet with salt water. Imagining that it might be human flesh, the gentlemen put the question to him, and he confessed that it was. Another of the islanders who stood near him was then asked whether it was a custom among them to eat their enemies who had been slain in battle; and he immediately replied in the affirmative.

Having left Atooi, as this island was named, they proceeded under an easy sail to Oneeheow, when Captain Cook dispatched the master in a boat to sound along the coast, and search for a landing place, and afterwards for fresh water. The master, at his return, reported that there was tolerable anchorage all along the coast; and that he had landed in one place, but could not find any fresh water.

Captain Cook being informed by some of the natives who had come off to the ships that fresh water might be obtained at a village which they saw at a little distance, ran down, and cast anchor before it, about six furlongs from the shore, the depth of water being twenty-six fathoms. The Discovery anchored at a greater distance from the shore, in twenty-three fathoms. The south-eastern point of Oneeheow bore south 65° east, about one league distant; and another island which they had discovered the preceding night, named Tahoora, bore south, 61° west, at the distance of seven leagues. Before they anchored, several canoes had come off to them, bringing potatoes, yams, and small pigs, besides mats.

The people who were in them resembled in their persons the inhabitants of Atooi; and, like them, were acquainted with the use of iron, which they asked for by the name of toe and hamaite, readily parting with all their commodities for pieces of this metal. Some more canoes came off after they had come to an anchor, but the islanders who were in these had apparently no other object than to make them a formal visit. Many of them came on board, and crouched down upon the deck; nor did they quit that humble posture till they were requested to rise. Several women, whom they had brought with them, remained alongside in the canoes, behaving with much more modesty than the females of Atooi; and at intervals they all joined in a song, which, though not very melodious, was performed in the exactest concert, by beating time upon their breasts with their hands. The men who had come on board did not continue long with them; and, before their departure, some of them desired permission to lay down locks of their hair on the deck.

One of the natives, who wished to get in at the gun-room port, having been refused, he then asked whether the English would kill and eat him if he should come in; accompanying this question with signs so expressive, that the gentlemen did not entertain a doubt with respect to their being cannibals. They had now an opportunity of retorting the question as to this practice; and a man behind the other, in the canoe, instantly replied, that if the gentlemen were killed on shore, they would not scruple to eat them: not that he meant they would destroy them for that purpose, but that their devouring them would be the consequence of their being at enmity with them.

The next day Mr. Gore was sent ashore, with a guard, and a party to trade with the inhabitants for refreshments. The captain's intent was to have followed soon afterwards, and he went from the ship with that design; but the surf had so greatly increased by this time, that he was apprehensive if he got ashore he should not be able to make his way back again. This circumstance really happened to his people who had landed with Mr. Gore; for the communication between them and the ships, by their own boats, was quickly stopped. They made a signal in the evening for the boats, which were accordingly sent; and, in a short time afterwards, returned with some good salt and a few yams. A considerable quantity of both these articles had been obtained in the course of the day; but the surf was so exceedingly high, that the greatest part of both had been lost in bringing them off to the boats. The officer, and twenty men, not venturing to run the risk of coming off, remained all night on shore. At night it blew a fresh gale, with squalls, and this weather continued for the whole succeeding day, during which the sea ran so high that all communication with their party on shore was totally intercepted, and the islanders themselves would not venture out to the ships in their canoes. Towards the evening, Captain Cook sent the master in a boat to the south-east point of the island, to try whether he could land in that quarter. He returned with a favourable report; but it was now too late to send for their party till the following morning: so that they were obliged to stay another night on shore. On the appearance of day-light, a boat was dispatched to the south-east point, with orders to Lieutenant Gore, that, if he could not embark his people from the spot

where they at present were, he should march them up to the point. The boat being prevented from getting to the beach, one of the crew swam to shore, and communicated the instructions. After the boat had returned, Captain Cook went himself with the launch and pinnace up to the point, in order to bring them off from the land. He took with him three goats, one of them a male, and the others female; a young boar and sow of the English breed; and also the seeds of onions, pumpkins, and melons. He landed with great ease under the west side of the point, where he found his party in company with some of the natives. To one of these, who assumed some degree of authority over the rest, he gave the goats, pigs, and seeds.

Captain Cook made a short excursion into the country, accompanied by this islander, and followed by two others, who carried the two pigs. When they had arrived upon a rising ground, the captain stopped to look around him, and immediately observed a woman, on the opposite side of the valley in which he had landed, calling out to her countrymen who attended him. Upon this, the man who acted as chief began to mutter something as if he was praying; and the two bearers of the pigs continued walking round the captain all the time, making about a dozen circuits before the other had made an end of his oraison. This strange ceremony being performed, they proceeded on their walk, and met people coming from all quarters, who, upon being called to by the captain's attendants, fell prostrate on their faces till he was out of sight. The ground over which he passed, though it was uncultivated and very stony, was covered with plants and shrubs, some of which perfumed the air with the most delicious fragrance.

Here were several salt-ponds, some of which had a small quantity of water remaining, but others had none. They saw no appearance of a running stream; and though, in some wells which they met with, the fresh water was pretty good, it seemed to be scarce. The houses of the natives were thinly scattered about; and it was supposed that there were not more than five hundred persons in the whole island. The method of living among these people was decent and cleanly. No instance was observed of the men and women eating together; and the latter seemed in general to be associated in companies by themselves. The oily nuts of the dooe-dooe are burned by these islanders for lights during the night; and they dress their hogs by baking them in ovens, splitting the carcases through the whole length. Several mysterious ceremonies were observed; one of which was performed by a woman, who threw a pig into the surf, and drowned it, and then tied up a bundle of wood, which she disposed of in the like manner. The same female, at another time, beat a man's shoulders with a stick, after he had seated himself for that purpose. An extraordinary veneration seemed to be paid here to owls, which they keep very tame. It appeared to be a pretty general practice among them to pull out one of their teeth; and when they were asked the reason of this remarkable custom, the only answer they gave was that it was teeha; which was also the reason assigned by them for giving a lock of their hair.

About seven in the evening the anchor of the Resolution started, so that she drove off the bank, and they found themselves at day-break, on the 2d of February, nine miles to the leeward of their last station. The

captain foreseeing that it would require more time to regain it than he chose to employ, made the signal for the Discovery to weigh anchor and join them. This junction was effected about noon; and both ships immediately directed their course to the northward, in prosecution of their voyage. Thus, after they had spent more time in the neighbourhood of these islands than was necessary to have answered all their purposes, they were obliged to quit them before they had completed their stock of water, or procured from them such a plentiful supply of refreshments as the natives were both able and willing to have furnished them with. Their ship, however, obtained from them provisions that lasted at least three weeks; and Captain Clerke, more fortunate than Captain Cook, acquired such a quantity of vegetables as sufficed the Discovery's people upwards of two months.

The islands in the Pacific Ocean, which have been discovered in the course of these voyages, have been generally found in groups; the single intermediate isles hitherto met with being few in proportion to the rest; though, in all probability, there are many more of them yet unknown, which serve as gradations of steps between the several clusters. Of what number this new-discovered archipelago is composed could not be ascertained. Our navigators observed five of them, whose names are Woahoo, Atooi, Oneeheow, Oreehoua, and Tahoora. The last of these is a small elevated island, at the distance of four or five leagues from the south-east point of Oneeheow.

The climate seemed to be very variable; for, according to the general opinion, it was at this time the season of the year when the weather is supposed to be most

settled, the sun being at his greatest annual distance. The heat was now very moderate; and few of those inconveniences to which many countries lying within the tropics are subject, either from heat or moisture, seem to be experienced here.

Besides the vegetables purchased by the gentlemen as refreshments, among which were at least five or six varieties of plantains, the island produces bread-fruit: this however seems to be scarce, as they only saw one tree of that species. There are also a few cocoa-palms, some yams, the kappe of the Friendly Islands, or Virginian arum, the etooa tree, and odoriferous gardenia, or cape jasmine. They met with several trees of the dooe-dooe, that bear the oily nuts, which are stuck upon a kind of skewer, and made use of as candles. Upon the dry sand about the village grew a plant that had never been seen before in this ocean, of the size of a common thistle, and prickly; but bearing a fine flower greatly resembling a white poppy.

The scarlet birds which were brought for sale were never met with alive; but they saw one small one, about the size of a canary-bird, of a deep crimson colour. They also saw a large owl, two brown hawks or kites, and a wild duck. They heard from the natives the names of some other birds, among which were the otoo, or blueish heron, and the torata, a sort of whimbrel.

Fish, and other productions of the sea, were, to appearance, not various, as, besides the small mackarel, they only saw common mullets, a species of a chalky colour, a small brownish rock-fish, adorned with blue spots, a turtle, which was penned up in a pond, and three or four sorts of fish salted.

The only tame or domestic animals that they found here were hogs, dogs, and fowls, which were all of the same kind that they met with at the islands of the South Pacific. There were also small lizards and some rats, resembling those of every island which they had hitherto visited.

The inhabitants are of the middle size, and, in general, stoutly made. They are neither remarkable for a beautiful shape, nor for striking features. Their visage, particularly that of the women, is sometimes round, but others have it long; nor can it justly be said that they are distinguished, as a nation, by any general cast of countenance. Their complexion is nearly of a nut-brown; but some individuals are of a darker hue. They are active, vigorous, and most expert swimmers, leaving their canoes upon the most frivolous occasion, diving under them, and swimming to others, though at a considerable distance. Women, with infants at the breast, when the surf was so high as to prevent their landing in the canoes, have been seen to leap overboard, and swim to the shore, without endangering their little ones. They appear to be of a frank, cheerful disposition, and seem to cultivate a social intercourse with each other.

There is no appearance of defence or fortification near any of their villages, and the houses are scattered about without the least order. Some of these habitations are large and commodious, from forty to fifty feet in length, and twenty or thirty in breadth; while others of them are contemptible hovels. Their figure resembles that of hay-stacks; or, perhaps a better idea may be conceived of them by supposing the roof of a barn placed on the ground, in such a manner as to form a high

acute ridge, with two low sides. The gable at each end, corresponding to the sides, makes these dwelling-places close all round; and they are well thatched with long grass, which is laid on slender poles. The entrance is made either in the end or side, and is an oblong hole, extremely low; it is often shut up by a board of planks, fastened together, which serves as a door; but, as it has no hinges, must be removed occasionally. No light enters the house except by this opening; and though such close habitations may be comfortable places of retreat in bad weather, they seem but ill-adapted to the warm climate of this country. They are kept remarkably clean, and the floors are strewed with dried grass, over which mats are spread to sit and sleep on. At one end stands a bench, about three feet high, on which the domestic utensils are placed. These consist of gourd-shells, which the natives convert into vessels that serve as bottles to hold water, and as baskets to contain their food and other things; and also of a few wooden bowls and trenchers of various sizes.

They bake their vegetable articles of food with heated stones; and, from the great quantity which was seen dressed at one time, it was imagined that all the inhabitants of a village, or at least a considerable number of people, joined in the use of a common oven. Our navigators did not perceive them dress any animal food at this island; but Mr. Gore's party observed that it was dressed at Oneeheow in the same kind of ovens, which makes it highly probable that this is also the practice in Atooi; particularly as they met with no utensil there that could serve the purpose of boiling or stewing. The only artificial dish they saw was a taro pudding; which, though very sour, was devoured with avidity by the

natives. They eat off a sort of wooden trenchers; and as far as the gentlemen were enabled to judge from one instance, the women, if restrained from feeding at the same dish with the men, as is the custom at Otaheite, are, at least, allowed to eat in the same place near them.

There is great neatness and ingenuity in their manufactures, of which cloth is the principal: they also fabricate a great many white mats.

They now stood away to the northward, with a gentle gale from the east, and for several days did scarcely see a bird. On the 1st of March they had a calm day, which was succeeded by a wind from the north, with which they stood to the east, intending to make land, as they ought to have been near it according to the charts.

On the 2d, during a calm, part of the sea appeared to be covered with a kind of slime, and some small sea animals were seen swimming about. Those which were most conspicuous were of the gelatinous kind, almost globular; a smaller sort had a white, or shining appearance, and were in great abundance. Some of the latter were put into a glass cup with some salt water; and, when in a prone situation, they appeared like small scales, or pieces of silver. When they swam about, which they did with equal ease in various directions, they emitted the brightest colours of the most valuable gems, according to their position respecting the light. At one time they appeared pellucid, at another displaying the various tints of blue, from a sapphirine to a violet, mixed with a kind of ruby, and glowing with sufficient strength to illuminate the glass and water. When the vessel was held to the strongest light, the tints appeared more vivid; but almost vanished when the ani-

mals subsided to the bottom, and they had then a brownish appearance. By candle-light, the colour was principally a beautiful pale green, with a kind of burnished gloss; and, in the dark, it faintly exhibited a glowing fire.

Two large birds settled this day on the water, near the ship. About noon on the 6th they beheld two seals, and several whales; and early the next morning the long-expected coast of New Albion, (so named by Sir Francis Drake) was seen, at the distance of ten or twelve leagues, extending from north-east to south-east.

After variable light airs and calms, at eight o'clock in the evening of the 7th a breeze sprung up at south-west. They stood to the north-west, under an easy sail, intending to range along the coast at day-light; but the next morning at four, the wind having shifted to north-west, it blew in squalls, with rain.

In the afternoon of the 11th they discovered the land, which, at six, was about eight leagues distant. Here they tacked and sounded, but could not reach the ground with a line of one hundred and sixty fathoms.

The land which they approached is moderately high, but, in many places, it rises still higher within. It is diversified with hills and rising-grounds, many of which are covered with tall straight trees; and others, which were not so high, grew in spots, like clumps or coppices; but the spaces between, and the sides of the rising grounds, were clear. Though, perhaps, as a summer prospect, this might be very agreeable, yet, at this season, it had an uncomfortable appearance, the bare grounds along the coast being covered with snow, which seemed to lie in abundance between the hills and rising grounds; and in many places towards the sea

had, at a distance, the appearance of white cliffs. On the rising grounds the snow was thinly spread; and farther inland there seemed to be none at all.

After coasting along, and still meeting with contrary winds, they again saw the land on the 29th. The face of the country was very different from that of the parts which they had before seen; numbers of lofty mountains presented themselves to their view, whose summits were covered with snow. The vallies between them, and the land towards the coast, were covered with high straight trees, that appeared like a vast forest. A low point was formed at the south-east extreme of the land, off which are several breakers, occasioned by some sunken rocks. It was therefore called Point Breakers. Its latitude is 49° 15′ N. longitude 233° 20′ E. The latitude of the other extreme is about 50°, and the longitude 232° This last was named Woody Point. It is high land, and projects to the south-west. Between these two points a large bay is formed, which Captain Cook called Hope Bay; hoping, as he said, to find in it a good harbour; and the event proved that he was not mistaken. As they approached the coast, they saw the appearance of two inlets, one of which was in the north-west, and the other in the north-east corner of the bay. They bore up for the latter, and passed some breakers about a league from the shore. Half a league without them they had nineteen and twenty fathoms water, but, after they had passed them, the depth increased to fifty fathoms; and farther in, the ground was unfathomable with the greatest length of line.

Though appearances were in their favour, they were not yet certain that there were any inlets; but, being in a deep bay, Captain Cook resolved to anchor, in order

to endeavour to get some water, which they began to be much in need of. As they advanced, however, the existence of the inlet no longer remained doubtful. About five o'clock, when they reached the west point of it, they were becalmed for some time. In this situation the captain ordered all the boats to be hoisted out, in order to tow the ships in. Presently a fresh breeze sprung up at north-west, with which they stretched up into an arm of the inlet, which ran in to the north-east. Here they were again becalmed, and found it necessary to anchor in eighty-five fathoms water, and so near the land as to be able to reach it with a hawser. The Discovery was becalmed before she got within the arm, where she anchored in seventy fathoms water.

As soon as they approached the inlet, they perceived the coast to be inhabited; and three canoes came off to the ship, at the place where they were first becalmed, in one of which were two men, in another six, and in the other ten. Advancing pretty near, a person stood in one of the two last, and spoke for a considerable time, inviting them (as supposed by his gestures) to go ashore; and, at the same time, continued strewing handfuls of feathers towards them. Some of his companions also threw a red powder in the same manner. The person who was the orator upon this occasion, was clothed with the skin of some animal, and held something in each hand, which rattled as he shook it. At length, grown weary with his repeated exhortations, of which not a word was comprehended, he became quiet; and the others, in their turn, had something to say; but their speeches were neither so long, nor so vehement as that of the other. The hair of two or three of these people was strewed over with small

white feathers; and that of others with large ones, stuck into different parts.

The tumultuous noise having ceased, they lay at a small distance from the ship, conversing together with much ease and composure, without shewing the least distrust or surprize. Some of them rose, occasionally, and said something aloud, after the manner of their first harangues; and one, in particular, sung a most agreeable air, accompanied with a great degree of melody and softness; the word haela being frequently repeated as the burden of the song.

A breeze springing up soon after, brought the vessel closer to the shore, when the canoes began to visit them in great numbers, having had at one time no less than thirty-two of them about the ship, containing from three to seven or eight persons each, and of both sexes. Several of these also stood up and spake aloud, using the same gestures as the first visitors. One canoe particularly attracted observation, by a peculiar head, which had a bird's eye, and an enormous large beak, painted on it. The person who was in it, and who appeared to be a chief, was equally remarkable for his singular appearance; having a large quantity of feathers hanging from his head, and being painted, or smeared, in a very extraordinary manner. In his hand he had a carved bird of wood, of the size of a pigeon, with which he often rattled, like the person before-mentioned, and was equally vociferous in his harangue, which was accompanied with many expressive gestures. They were very ready to part with any thing they had, and received whatever they offered them in exchange; but were more solicitous after iron, than any of their other articles of commerce; appearing to be no strangers to the

racoons, martins, and pole-cats. They also produced garments made of skins; and another kind of cloathing, fabricated from the bark of a tree, or a plant resembling hemp. Besides these articles, they had bows, arrows, and spears; fish-hooks, and various kinds of instruments; wooden vizors, representing horrid figures; a sort of woollen-stuff, carved work, beads, and red ochre; also several little ornaments of thin brass and iron, resembling an horse-shoe, which they wear pendant at their noses. They had likewise several pieces of iron fixed to handles, somewhat resembling chissels. From their being in possession of these metals, it was natural to infer, that they must either have been visited before by persons of some civilized nation, or had connections with those on their own continent, who had some communication with them.

Among all the articles, however, which they exposed to sale, the most extraordinary were human skulls and hands, with some of the flesh remaining on them, which they acknowledged they had been feeding on; and some of them, indeed, bore evident marks of their having been upon the fire. From this circumstance, it was but too apparent, that the horrid practice of devouring their enemies is practised here, as much as at New Zealand and other South Sea islands. For the various articles they brought, they received in exchange knives, chissels, nails, looking-glasses, buttons, pieces of iron and tin, or any kind of metal.

The next day was employed in hauling their ships into the cove, where they were moored. They found, on heaving up the anchor, notwithstanding the great depth of water, that rocks were at the bottom. These had greatly injured the cable, as well as the hausers that

were carried out to warp the ship into the cove; consequently the whole bottom was strewed with rocks. The ship was now become very leaky in her upper works; the carpenters were therefore ordered to caulk her, and to repair any other defects they might discover.

In the course of this day, the news of their arrival brought vast numbers of the natives about their ships. At one time they counted above a hundred canoes, each of which, on an average, had five people on board; few containing less than three; many having seven, eight, or nine; and one was manned with seventeen. Many of these were new visitors, which they discovered by their orations and ceremonies, when they approached the ships. If they, at first, had apprehended that the English meant to be hostile, their fears were now removed; for they ventured on board the ships, and mixed with the sailors with the utmost familiarity. They discovered, however, by this intercourse, that they were as fond of pilfering as any they had met with during their voyage: and they were much more mischievous than any of the other thieves they had found; for, having sharp instruments in their possession, they could in an instant cut a hook from a tackle, or a piece of iron from a rope. They were, indeed, so dexterous in effecting their purposes, that one fellow would contrive to amuse the sailors at one end of the boat, while another was forcing off the iron-work at the other. If an article that had been stolen, was immediately missed, the thief was easily detected, as they were fond of impeaching each other. But the prize was always reluctantly given up by the guilty person; and sometimes

compulsive means were obliged to be exercised for that purpose.

Both ships being safely moored, they proceeded, April 1, to other necessary business. The observatories were taken ashore, and placed upon a rock on one side of the cove, not far from the Resolution. A party of men was ordered to cut wood, and clear a place for watering. Having plenty of pine-trees here, others were employed in brewing spruce beer. The forge was also erected, to make the necessary iron-work for repairing the fore-mast, which had one of those bibs defective, and was otherwise incomplete.

The natives, who still continued their visits, had a singular mode of introducing themselves on their first appearance. They paddled, with their utmost strength and activity, round both the ships; a chief, all this time, standing up with a spear in his hand, and speaking, or rather bawling, most vociferously: sometimes the face of this orator was covered with a mask, representing either a human countenance, or that of some other animal; and, instead of a spear, he had a kind of rattle in his hand. Having made this ceremonious circuit round the ship, they would come alongside, and then begin to traffic. Frequently, indeed, they would first entertain them with a song, in which their whole company joined, and produced a very agreeable harmony. During these visits, great care was taken to guard against their thievery. They had, however, in the morning of the 4th, a very serious alarm. A party, who were employed on shore in cutting wood and filling water, observed that the natives, in all quarters, were arming themselves in the best manner they were able, and that those who had not proper weapons were

collecting sticks and stones. Hearing this, it was thought necessary to arm also; but, being resolved to act upon the defensive, Captain Cook ordered all the workmen to repair to the rock on which the observatories had been placed, leaving the supposed enemy in possession of the ground where they had assembled, which was within about a hundred yards of the Resolution's stern. Their danger, however, was only imaginary; for these hostile preparations were directed against a body of their own countrymen, who were advancing to attack them. The natives of the Sound perceiving the apprehensions of their friends, exerted their best endeavours to convince them that this was really the case. At length the matter in dispute appeared to be adjusted; but the strangers were not permitted to approach the ships, nor to have any intercourse or dealings with our navigators.

In the afternoon they resumed their work, and the next day rigged the foremast, the head of which not being large enough for the cap, the carpenter was ordered to fill up the vacant space. In examining the state of the mast-head for this purpose, both cheeks were discovered to be rotten; insomuch that there was not a possibility of repairing them. They were therefore obliged to get the mast out, and to supply it with new ones.

Thus, when almost ready for sea, all their work was to be done over again, and an additional repair was necessary to be undertaken, which would require much time to be completed. It was, however, fortunate that these defects should be discovered when they were so commodiously situated as to be able to procure the materials that were requisite; for, in the cove where their

ships lay there were some small seasoned trees, perfectly adapted for their purpose; and two new cheeks were immediately made from one of these. In the morning of the 7th, having got the foremast out, they hauled it ashore, and the carpenters were set to work upon it. Some of their lower standing rigging being much decayed, the captain embraced the opportunity, while the fore-mast was repairing, of ordering a new set of main-rigging to be fitted, and the fore-rigging to be improved.

From their putting into the sound till this time the weather had been remarkably fine; but, in the morning of the 8th, the wind blew fresh at south-east, accompanied with hazy weather and rain; it increased in the afternoon, and in the evening it blew extremely hard. It came in heavy squalls right into the cove, from over the high land on the opposite shore; and, though the ships were well moored, they were in a dangerous situation.

The gale abated about eight o'clock, but the rain continued, almost without intermission, for several days; during which time, a tent was erected over the foremast, that the carpenters might be enabled to proceed in their labours with some degree of convenience.

The natives were not discouraged by this bad weather from making daily visits; and, at present, such visits were very acceptable to them. They frequently brought a supply of fish, when they were unable to catch any with a hook and line, and they had not a convenient place to draw a net. The fish they brought were small cod, and a small kind of bream, or sardine.

On the 11th, they received a visit in the evening from a tribe of natives whom they had not seen before; and who, in general, made a better appearance than their old friends. Captain Cook conducted them into the cabin, but there was not an object that demanded their attention; all novelties were looked on with indifference, except by a very few, who shewed a certain degree of curiosity.

A party of strangers, in seven or eight canoes, came into the cove on the 18th, and after looking at the ship for some time, retired. The gentlemen apprehended that their old friends, who, at this time were more numerous about them than their new visitors, would not suffer them to have any dealings with them. It was evident, indeed, that the neighbouring inhabitants engrossed them entirely to themselves, and that they carried on a traffic with more distant tribes in those articles they had received from them; for they frequently disappeared for four or five days together, and returned with fresh cargoes of curiosities and skins.

Such of the natives as visited them daily were the most beneficial to them; for, after disposing of their trifles, they employed themselves in fishing, and the gentlemen always partook of what they caught. They also procured from them a considerable quantity of good animal oil, which they brought in bladders. Some, indeed, attempted to cheat them by mixing water with the oil; and, once or twice, they so far imposed upon them as to fill their bladders with water only. But, it was better for them to wink at these impositions than suffer them to produce a quarrel; for their articles of traffic chiefly consisted of trifles, and they found it difficult to produce a constant supply even of these. Beads, and

such like toys, of which they had some remaining, were not highly estimated. Metal was principally demanded, and brass had now supplanted iron, being sought after with such eagerness, that, before they left the Sound, hardly a bit was to be found in the ships, except what constituted a part of their necessary instruments: suits of cloaths were stripped of their buttons; bureaus of their furniture; kettles, canisters, and candlesticks, all were destroyed.

The weather, hitherto bad, cleared up on the 19th, when they embraced the opportunity of getting up the top-masts and yards, and of fixing up the rigging. Most of their heavy work being now finished, Captain Cook set out the next morning to survey the Sound; and, going first to the west point, he discovered a large village, and, before it, a very snug harbour, with from nine to four fathoms water. The inhabitants, who were numerous, received him with great courtesy, every one pressing him to enter his apartment, for several families have habitations under the same roof. He politely accepted the invitations, and the hospitable friends whom he visited testified every mark of civility and respect. Women were employed in many of these habitations in making dresses, and executed their business much like the inhabitants of New-Zealand. Others were busy in opening and curing fish.

Leaving this village, Captain Cook proceeded up the west side of the sound. For near three miles he saw several small islands, so situated as to form some convenient harbours, the depths being from thirty to seven fathoms. About two leagues within the Sound, on the same side, an arm runs in the direction of north-north-west, and another in the same direction about two miles

further. About a mile above the second arm he found the ruins of a village. The framings of the houses remained standing, but the boards or roofs were taken away. Behind this deserted village is a small plain, covered with the largest pine trees that the captain had ever seen. This was indeed singular, as most of the elevated ground on this side of the Sound appeared rather naked.

Passing from this place to the east side of the Sound, Captain Cook found what he before imagined, that it was an island under which the ships lay; and that many smaller ones lay scattered on the west side of it. Upon the main land, opposite the north end of their island, the captain observed a village, and landed there; but he was not so politely received by the inhabitants as by those of the other village he had visited. This cold reception was occasioned by one surly chief, who would not suffer the captain to enter their houses, but followed him wherever he went, making expressive signs that he was impatient for him to be gone. Captain Cook attempted, but in vain, to sooth him with presents; for though he did not refuse them, he continued the same kind of behaviour. But, notwithstanding this treatment from the inhospitable chief, some of the young women expeditiously apparelled themselves in their best, assembled in a body, and gave him a hearty welcome to the village, by joining in an agreeable song. Evening now drawing on, Captain Cook proceeded for the ships round the north-west end of the island. When he returned on board, he was informed that, in his absence, some strangers, in two or three large canoes, had made a visit to the ships; from whom they understood, by signs, that they had come from the south-east. They brought with

them several garments, skins, and other articles, which they bartered for some of theirs. But the most remarkable circumstance was, that two silver table-spoons were purchased of them by the gentlemen, which appeared to be of Spanish manufacture. They were worn round the neck of one of these visitors by way of ornament.

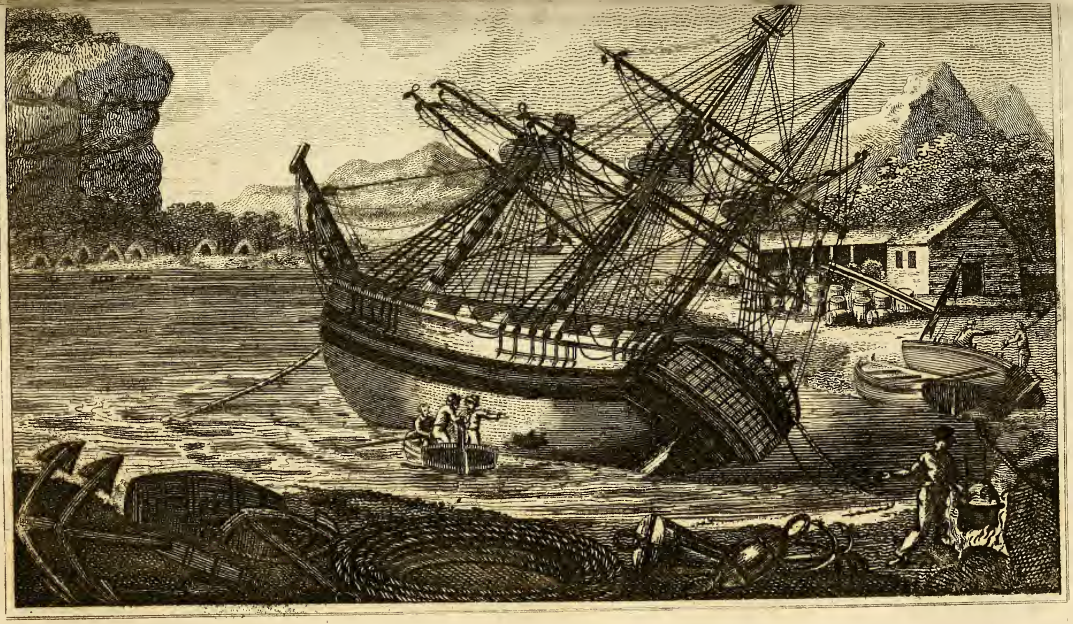
On the 21st they were visited by a number of strangers in twelve or thirteen canoes. After some time they advanced towards the ships, all standing up in their canoes, and began to sing. Having thus favoured them with a specimen of their music, with which they were highly entertained for half an hour, they came nearer the ships, and bartered with them.

Captains Cook and Clerke now went with two boats to the village at the west point, where the former had been two days before, and had observed that plenty of grass was to be had near it; and it was necessary to get a supply of this for the few remaining goats and sheep which were still on board. They experienced the same welcome reception that Captain Cook had met with before; and, soon after they went ashore, Captain Cook ordered some of his people to begin cutting; not imagining that the natives would object to their furnishing themselves with what could not be of any use to them. In this, however, he was mistaken, for, as soon as the men began cutting the grass, some of the inhabitants would not permit them to proceed, saying. "makook," which signified that they must buy it first. Captain Cook, at this time, was in one of the houses; but hearing of this, he repaired immediately to the field, where he found about a dozen claimants of different parts of the grass that grew on the premises. The captain treated with them for it, and having complied with the terms

of his purchase, thought they had now full liberty to cut wherever they pleased. Here he was again mistaken; for he had so liberally paid the first pretended proprietors, that fresh demands were made from others; so that it almost appeared that every single blade of grass had a separate owner; and so many of them were to be satisfied, that his pockets presently became empty. When they were, however, convinced that he had nothing more to give, they ceased to be importunate, and they were permitted to cut where, and as much, as they pleased.

Every thing being now prepared, they intended to have put to sea on the 26th, but having both wind and tide against them, they were under a necessity of waiting till noon; when a calm succeeded the south-west wind, and the tide at the same time turning in their favour, they towed the ships out of the cove. They had variable airs and calms till about four in the afternoon, when a breeze sprung up, attended with thick hazy weather, and they had every appearance of an approaching storm from the southward. In this situation Captain Cook hesitated for a short time, (as night was then approaching) whether he should sail immediately or stay till the next morning. But his anxiety to proceed upon the voyage, and the fear of losing so good an opportunity of getting out of the sound, operated more strongly upon his mind than the apprehensions of danger, and he resolved to put to sea.

They were attended by the natives till they were almost out of the sound; some in their canoes, and others on board the ships. One of the chiefs, who had particularly attached himself to the commodore, was among the last who parted from them. Captain Cook, a little



Repairing of Capt. Cook's Ship, in Endeavour River.

time before he went, made him a small present, for which he received in return a beaver-skin of a much superior value. This occasioned him to make some addition to his present, which pleased the chief so highly, that he presented to the captain the beaver-skin cloak which he then wore, and of which he was particularly fond. Struck with this instance of generosity, and wishing him not to be a sufferer by his generosity, Captain Cook insisted upon his acceptance of a new broad-sword, with a brass hilt, with which he appeared greatly delighted. They were earnestly importuned by the chief and many of his countrymen to pay them another visit; who, by way of inducement, promised to procure a large stock of skins.

King George's Sound was the appellation given by Captain Cook to this inlet, on their first arrival; but he was afterwards informed that the natives called it Nootka. Within its circuit are numerous harbours and anchoring places.

Upon the sea-coast the land is tolerably high and level; but within the Sound it rises into steep hills, which have an uniform appearance, ending in roundish tops, with sharp ridges on their sides. Many of these hills are high, and others are of a more moderate height; but all of them are covered on their tops with the thickest woods. The trees of which these woods are principally composed are the Canadian pine, white cypress, and two or three other sorts of pine. In general, the trees grow here with great vigour, and are of a large size. About the rocks and borders of the woods they saw some strawberry plants, and raspberry, currant, and gooseberry bushes, all in a flourishing state.

The season of the year, and the necessary repairs

of the ship, did not permit them to acquire much knowledge of the vegetables of this country. Lying in a cove, on an island, all the animals they saw alive were two or three racoons, martins, and squirrels; some indeed, who landed on the continent on the south-east side of the Sound, saw the prints of a bear's feet not far from the shore. The only account, therefore, that can be given of the quadrupeds, is taken from the skins which were purchased of the inhabitants; and these were sometimes so mutilated in the heads, tails, and paws, that the gentlemen could not even guess to what animals they belonged; though others were either so perfect, or so well known, that they did not admit of a doubt about them. The most common among them were bears, deer, foxes, and wolves. Bear skins were very plentiful, generally of a shining black colour, but not very large. The deer skins were not so numerous, and appeared to belong to what are called the fallow-deer. There are numbers of foxes, and of several varieties; the skins of some being yellow, with a black tip at the tail; others of a reddish yellow, intermixed with black; and others of an ash colour, also intermixed with black. Here is the common martin, the pine martin, and another of a lighter brown colour. The ermine is also found in this country, but is small, and not very common. The racoons and squirrels are such as are common, but the latter is not so large as ours, and has a rusty colour extending the length of the back. Hogs, dogs, and goats, have not yet made their appearance in this place; nor have the natives any knowledge of our brown rats, to which they applied the name they gave to squirrels when they saw them on board the ships.

The sea animals near the coast are whales, porpoises, and seals; the latter appearing, from their skins, to be of the common sort. It was doubted for some time whether the skins, which the natives sold for otter skins, really belonged to that animal; but, a short time before their departure, a whole one, just killed, was purchased from some strangers. It was young, weighing only twenty-five pounds; was of a glossy black colour, but many of the hairs being tipt with white, gave it at first sight a greyish cast. The face, throat, and breast, were of a light brown, or yellowish white; and, in many of the skins, that colour extended the whole length of the belly. In each jaw it had six cutting teeth; two in the lower jaw being exceedingly small, and placed without, at the base of the two in the middle. The fur of these creatures is certainly finer than that of any other animal, consequently, the discovery of this part of North America, where so valuable an article of commerce is to be procured, ought certainly to be considered as a matter of some consequence.

Birds are far from being numerous here, and those that are to be seen are remarkably shy, owing, perhaps, to their being continually harassed by the natives, either to eat them, or become possessed of their feathers to be worn as ornaments. There are crows and ravens, not differing in the least from those in England; also a jay or magpie, the common wren, which is the only singing-bird they heard, the Canadian thrush, the brown eagle, with a white head and tail, a small species of hawk, a heron, and the large-crested American king-fisher. There are also some that have not yet been mentioned by those who have treated on natural history; likewise humming-birds, which differ in some de-

gree from the numerous sorts already known of this delicate little animal. The quebrantahuessos, shags, and gulls, were seen off the coast; and the two last were also frequent in the Sound. There are two sorts of wild ducks, one of which was black, with a white head, the other was white, and had a red bill, but of a larger size. Here are also the greater lumme, or diver, which are found in our northern countries. Some swans too were once or twice seen flying to the northward. On the shores was found another sand-piper, about the size of a lark, and not unlike the burre: also a plover, very much resembling our common sea-lark.

Though the variety of fish is not very great here, they are more plentiful in quantity than birds. The principal sorts are the common herring, which are very numerous, though not exceeding seven inches in length, a smaller sort, which, though larger than the anchovy, or sardine, is of the same kind, a silver-coloured bream, and another of a golden brown colour, with narrow blue stripes. It is most probable that the herrings and sardines come in large shoals at stated seasons, as is usual with those kind of fish. Considerable numbers of those fish called the chimœræ, or little sea-wolves, are met with here. Sharks also frequent the Sound, the teeth of which many natives had in their possession. The other marine animals are a small cruciated medusa, or blubber, star-fish, small crabs, and a large cuttle-fish. About the rocks there is an abundance of large muscles; also sea-ears; and they often found shells of pretty large plain chamæ. Besides these, there are some plain cockles and limpets.

The only reptiles observed here were brown snakes, about two feet in length, having whitish stripes on the

back and sides, and brownish water-lizards. The former are so perfectly harmless that the natives carried them alive in their hands. The insect tribe seem to be more numerous; for, though the season for their appearance was only beginning, there were several different sorts of butterflies, all of which were common; also some humble-bees, gooseberry moths, a few beetles, two or three sorts of flies, and some musquitoes.

Though they found both iron and copper here, they did not imagine that either of them belonged to this place. They did not even see the ores of any metal except a coarse red ochry substance, used by the natives in painting or staining themselves.

The stature of the natives is, in general, below the common standard; but their persons are not proportionably slender, being usually pretty plump, though not muscular. Their soft fleshiness, however, seems never to swell into corpulence; and many of the older people are rather lean. Most of the natives have round full visages, which are sometimes broad, with high prominent cheeks. Above these the face frequently appears fallen in quite across between the temples; the nose flattens at its base, has wide nostrils, and a rounded point. The forehead is low, the eyes small, black, and languishing; the mouth round, the lips thick, and the teeth regular and well set, but not remarkable for their whiteness. Some have no beard at all, and others only a small thin one upon the point of the chin. This does not arise from an original deficiency of hair on that part, but from their plucking it out by the roots: for those who do not destroy it, have not only considerable beards on every part of the chin, but also whiskers, or mustachias, running from the upper lip to the lower jaw ob-

liquely downward. Their eye-brows are also scanty and narrow; but they have abundance of hair on the head, which is strong, black, straight, and lank. Their necks are short, and their arms are rather clumsy, having nothing of beauty or elegance in their formation. The limbs, in all of them, are small in proportion to the other parts; besides, they are crooked and ill-formed, having projecting ancles, and large feet awkwardly shaped. The latter defect seems to be occasioned, in a great measure, by their sitting so continually on their hams and knees.

Their colour cannot be properly ascertained, their bodies being incrusted with paint and nastiness; though, when these have been carefully rubbed off, the skin was little inferior in whiteness to that of the Europeans, though of that palish cast which distinguishes the inhabitants of the southern nations. Some of them, when young, appear rather agreeable, when compared to the generality of the people, that period of life being attended with a peculiar degree of animation; but, after a certain age, the distinction is hardly observable; a remarkable sameness characterizes every countenance, dulness and want of expression being visibly pourtrayed in every visage. The women, in general, are of the same size, colour, and form, with the men; nor is it easy to distinguish them, as they possess no natural feminine delicacies. Nor was there a single one to be found, even among those who were in their prime, who had the least pretensions to beauty or comeliness.

Their dress, in common, is a kind of flaxen mantle, ornamented with a narrow stripe of fur on the upper edge, and fringes at the lower edge. Passing under

the left arm, it is tied over the right shoulder, leaving both arms perfectly free. Sometimes the mantle is fastened round the waist by a girdle of coarse matting. Over this is worn a small cloak of the same substance, reaching to the waist, also fringed at the bottom. They wear a cap like a truncated cone, or a flower-pot, made of very fine matting, ornamented with a round knob or a bunch of leathern tassels, having a string passing under the chin to prevent its blowing off.

Besides the above dress, which is common to both sexes, the men often wear over their other garments the skin of some animal, as a bear, wolf, or sea otter, with the hair outwards; sometimes tying it before, and sometimes behind, like a cloak. They throw a coarse mat about their shoulders in rainy weather, and they have woollen garments which are but little used. They generally wear their hair hanging loosely down; but those who have not a cap, tie it into a kind of bunch on the crown of the head. Their dress is certainly convenient, and, were it kept clean, would not be inelegant; but, as they are continually rubbing their bodies over with a red paint, mixed with oil, their garments become greasy, and contract a rancid offensive smell. The appearance, indeed, of these people, is both wretched and filthy, and their heads and garments swarm with lice. Their bodies, it has been observed, are always covered with red paint, but their faces are ornamented with a variety of colours, a black, a brighter red, or a white colour: the last of these gives them a ghastly horrible appearance. Many of their ears are perforated in the lobe, where they make a large hole, and two smaller ones higher up on the outer edge. In these holes are hung bits of bone, quills fastened upon a leather throng,

shells, bunches of tassels, or thin pieces of copper. In some, the septum of the nose is also perforated, and a piece of cord drawn through it. Others wear at the same place pieces of copper, brass, or iron, shaped somewhat like a horse-shoe, the narrow opening receiving the septum, so that it may be pinched gently by the two points, and thus the ornament hangs over the upper lip. The rings of buttons were eagerly purchased, and appropriated to this use. Their bracelets, which they wear about their wrists, are bunches of white bugle beads, or thongs with tassels, or a broad black horny shining substance. Round their ancles they frequently wear leathern thongs, or the sinews of animals curiously twisted.

Such are their common dresses and ornaments, but they have some that are used only on extraordinary occasions, such as going to war, and exhibiting themselves to strangers in ceremonial visits.

Thus equipped, they have a truly savage and ridiculous appearance, which is much heightened when they assume their monstrous decorations. These consist of a great variety of wooden masks, applied to the face, forehead, or upper part of the head. Some of these visors resemble human faces, having hair, beards, and eye-brows; others represent the heads of birds, and many the heads of animals, such as deer, wolves, porpoises, and others. These representations generally exceed the natural size, and are frequently strewed with pieces of the foliaceous mica, which make them glitter and augment their deformity. Sometimes they even exceed this, and fix large pieces of carved work upon the head, projecting to a considerable distance, and resembling the prow of a canoe. So much do they de-

light in these disguises, that, for want of another mask, one of them has been seen to thrust his head into a tin kettle which he had bought from the gentlemen. Whether these extravagant masquerade ornaments are used on any religious occasion, or in any kind of diversion, or whether they are calculated to intimidate by their monstrous appearance, or as decoys when hunting animals, is uncertain. But, if travellers, in an ignorant and credulous age, when more than marvellous things were supposed to exist, had seen several people decorated in this manner, and had not approached so near them as to be undeceived, they would have believed, and have endeavoured to make others believe, that a race of beings existed partaking of the nature of man and beast.

From their exhibiting human skulls and bones to sale, there is little reason to doubt of their treating their enemies with a degree of brutal cruelty; but as this circumstance rather marks a general agreement of character among almost every uncivilized tribe, in every age and country, they are not to be reproached with any charge of peculiar inhumanity. Their disposition, in this respect, the Europeans had not any reason to judge unfavourably of. They appear to be docile, courteous, and good-natured; but they are quick in resenting injuries, notwithstanding the predominancy of their phlegm; and like all other passionate people, as quickly forgetting them. These fits of passion never extended farther than the parties concerned; the spectators never entering into the merits of the quarrel, but shewing as much indifference as if they were wholly unacquainted with the whole transaction. It was common to see one of them rave and scold, while all his agitation did not in

the least excite the attention of his countrymen, and when the English could not discover the object of his displeasure. They never betray the least symptom of timidity upon these occasions, but seem resolutely determined to punish the insulter. Their other passions appear to lie dormant, especially their curiosity. Few expressed any desire or inclination to see or examine things with which they were unacquainted; and which, to a curious observer, would appear astonishing. If they could procure the articles they knew and wanted, they were perfectly satisfied, regarding every thing else with indifference. But it must be admitted that they are not wholly unsusceptible of the tender passions, which is evident from their being fond of music, and that too of the truly pathetic kind. Their songs are generally slow and solemn, but their music is less confined than that which is usually found in other rude nations; the variations being very numerous and expressive, and the melody powerfully soothing. Besides their concerts, sonnets were frequnetly sung by single performers, keeping time by striking the hand against the thigh. Though solemnity was predominant in their music, they sometimes entertained us in a gay and lively strain, and even with a degree of pleasantry and humour.

A rattle and a small whistle are the only instruments of music which were seen among them. The rattle is used when they sing; but upon what occasions the whistle is used was never known, unless it be when they assume the figures of particular animals, and endeavour to imitate their howl or cry.

The only inhabited parts of the Sound seem to be the two villages already mentioned. The houses consist of

three ranges or rows, placed at almost equal distances behind each other, the front row being the largest; and there are a few straggling houses at each end. These rows are intersected by narrow paths, or lanes, at irregular distances, passing upward; but those between the houses are considerably broader. Though this general disposition has some appearance of regularity, there is none in the respective houses; for every division made by the paths may either be considered as one or more houses, there being no regular separation to distinguish them by, either within or without. These erections consist of very long broad planks, resting upon the edges of each other, tied in different parts with withes of pine-bark. They have only slender posts on the outside, at considerable distances from each other, to which they are also fastened; but there are some larger posts within, placed aslant. The sides and ends of these habitations are about seven or eight feet in height, but the back part is somewhat higher. The planks, therefore, which compose the roof, slant forward, and, being loose, may be moved at pleasure. They may either be put close to exclude the rain, or separated to admit the light in fine weather. These habitations have no regular doors, and can only be entered by a hole which the unequal length of the planks has accidentally made. In the sides of the house they have also holes to look out at, serving for windows; but these are very irregularly disposed, without attending in the least to the shape and size of them. Within the habitations there is frequently a view from one end to the other of these ranges of building; for, though there are some appearances of separations on each side, for the accommodation of different persons or families, they do not intercept the sight,

and generally consist of pieces of plank, extending from the side to the middle of the house. On the sides of each of these parts is a little bench, about five or six inches higher than the rest of the floor, covered with mats, whereon the family sit and sleep. The length of these benches is generally seven or eight feet, and the breadth four or five. The fire-place, which has neither hearth nor chimney, is in the middle of the floor. One house, in particular, was nearly separated from the rest by a close partition; and this was the most regular building of any that was seen. In it there were four of these benches, each holding a single family at the corner; but it had not any separation by boards, and the middle of the house seemed to be common to all the inhabitants.

The furniture of these houses consists principally of chests and boxes of various sizes, piled upon each other, at the sides or ends of the house, in which are deposited their garments, skins, masks, and other articles that are deemed valuable. Many of them are double, or the upper one serves as a lid to the other: some have a lid, fastened with thongs; others, that are very large, have a square hole cut in the upper part for the convenience of putting things in or taking them out. They are frequently painted black, studded with the teeth of animals, or rudely carved with figures of birds, &c. as decorations. They have also square and oblong pails; round wooden cups and bowls; wooden troughs of about two feet in length, out of which they eat their food; bags of matting, baskets of twigs, &c. Their implements for fishing, and other things, are hung up, or scattered in different parts of the house, without any kind of order, making, in the whole, a perfect scene of

confusion; except on the benches, which have nothing on them but the mats, which are of a superior quality to those that they usually have to sit on in the boats.

The irregularity and confusion of their houses is, however, far exceeded by their nastiness and stench. They not only dry their fish within doors, but they also gut them there; which, together with their bones and fragments, thrown upon the ground at meals, occasions several heaps of filth, which are never removed till it becomes troublesome, from their bulk, to pass over them. Every thing about the house stinks of train-oil, fish, and smoke; and every part of it is as filthy as can be imagined.

Many of these houses are decorated with images; which are nothing more than the trunks of large trees of the height of four or five feet, placed at the upper end of the apartment, with a human face carved on the front, and the hands and arms upon the sides. These figures too are variously painted, and make, upon the whole, a most ridiculous appearance. These images are generally called Klumma; but the names of two particular ones, standing abreast of each other, at the distance of about three or four feet, were Natchkoa and Matseeta. A sort of curtain, made of mat, usually hung before them, which the natives were sometimes unwilling to remove; and when they did consent to unveil them, they seemed to express themselves in a very mysterious manner. It seems probable that they sometimes make offerings to them; for, if our navigators rightly interpreted their signs, they requested them to give something to these images, when they drew the mats from before them. From these circumstances, it was natural to suppose that they were representatives of

their gods, or some superstitious symbols; and yet they were held in no very extraordinary degree of estimation, for, with a small quantity of brass or iron, any person might have purchased all the gods in the place.

The men are chiefly employed in fishing and killing animals for the sustenance of their families; few of them being seen engaged in any business in their houses, but the women are occupied in manufacturing their garments, and in curing their sardines, which they also carry from the canoes to their houses. The women also go in the small canoes to gather muscles and other shell-fish. They are as dexterous as the men in the management of these canoes; and when there are men in the canoes with them, they are paid very little attention to on account of their sex, none of the men offering to relieve them from the labour of the paddle. Nor do they shew them any particular respect or tenderness on other occasions.

The young men are remarkably indolent, being generally sitting about in scattered companies, basking themselves in the sun, or wallowing in the sand upon the beach, without any kind of covering. This disregard of decency was, however, confined solely to the men. The women were always decently clothed, and behaved with great propriety, justly meriting all commendation for a modest bashfulness, so becoming their sex. In them it is the more meritorious, as the men have not even a sense of shame.

Their weapons are bows and arrows, spears, slings, short truncheons made of bone, and a small pick-axe, somewhat resembling the common American tomahawk. Some of the arrows are pointed with iron, and others

with indented bone; the spear has usually a long point made of bone. The tomahawk is a stone of the length of seven or eight inches, one end terminating in a point, and the other fixed into a wooden handle. This handle is intended to resemble the head and neck of a human figure, the stone being fixed in the mouth, so as to represent a tongue of great magnitude. To heighten the resemblance, human hair is also fixed upon it. They have another weapon made of stone, which they call seeaik, about ten or twelve inches long, having a square point. Indeed, from the number of their weapons, it may be reasonably concluded that they often engage in close combat; and our navigators had very disagreeable proofs of their wars being both frequent and bloody, from the quantity of human skulls that were offered to sale.

The design and execution of their manufactures and mechanic arts are more extensive and ingenious than could possibly have been expected from the natural disposition of the people, and what little progress they had made in civilization. The flaxen and woollen garments engage their first care, as being the most material of those that may be classed under the head of manufactures. The former are fabricated from the bark of the pine-tree, beat into a mass resembling hemp. After being prepared in a proper manner, it is spread upon a stick, which is fastened upon two others in an erect position. The manufacturer, who sits on her hams at this simple machine, knots it across, at the distance of about half an inch from each other, with small plaited threads. Though it cannot, by this method, be rendered so close and firm as cloth that is woven, it is sufficiently

ently impervious to the air, and is likewise softer and more pliable.

Though their woollen garments are probably manufactured in the same manner, they have much the appearance of a woven cloth; but, the supposition of their being wrought in a loom is destroyed, by the various figures that are ingeniously inserted in them; it being very improbable that these people should be able to produce such a complex work, except immediately by their hands. They are of different qualities; some resembling our coarsest sort of blankets, and others not much inferior to our finest sort, and certainly both warmer and softer. The wool of which they are manufactured seems to be produced by different animals, particularly the fox and brown lynx; that from the lynx is the finest, and nearly resembles our coarser wools in colour; but the hair, which also grows upon the animal, being intermixed with it, the appearance of it is somewhat different when wrought. The ornamental figures in these garments are disposed with great taste, and are generally of a different colour, being usually dyed either of a deep brown, or a yellow; the latter of which, when new, equals in brightness the best of our carpets.

Their fondness for carving on all their wooden articles, corresponds with their taste in working figures upon their garments. Nothing is to be seen without a kind of freeze work, or a representation of some animal upon it; but the most general figure is that of the human face. The general design of these figures conveys a sufficient knowledge of the objects they are intended to represent; though, in the carving, very lit-

tle dexterity is displayed. But, in the execution of many of the masks and heads, they have shewn themselves ingenious sculptors. They preserve, with the greatest exactness, the general character of their own faces, and finish the more minute parts with great accuracy and neatness. That these people have a strong propensity to works of this sort, is observable in a variety of particulars. Representations of human figures, birds, beasts, fish, models of their canoes and household utensils, were found among them in very great abundance.

Having mentioned their skill in some of the imitative arts, such as working figures in their garments, and engraving or carving them in wood, we may also add their drawing them in colours. The whole process of their whale fishery has been represented, in this manner, on the caps they wear. This, indeed, was rudely executed, but served at least as a proof that, though they have not the knowledge of letters amongst them, they have a notion of representing actions in a lasting way, exclusive of recording them in their songs and traditions. They have also other painted figures, which, perhaps, have no established significations, and are only the creation of fancy or caprice.

Though the structure of their canoes is simple, they appear well calculated for every useful purpose. The largest, which contain upwards of twenty people, are formed of a single tree. The length of many of them is forty feet, the breadth seven, and the depth three. They are generally without any ornament; some have a little carving, and are studded with seals' teeth on the surface. Some have also a kind of additional prow, usually painted with the figure of some animal. They

have neither seats nor any other supporters on the inside, except some small round sticks about the size of a walking cane, placed across, about half the depth of the canoe. They are very light, and, on account of their breadth and flatness, swim firmly, without an out-rigger, of which they are all destitute. Their paddles, which are small and light, resemble a large leaf in shape, being pointed at the bottom, broad in the middle, and gradually becoming narrower in the shaft; the whole length being about five feet.

For fishing and hunting, their instruments are ingeniously contrived, and completely made. They consist of nets, hooks, and lines, harpoons, gigs, and an instrument resembling an oar. The latter is about twenty feet in length, four or five inches in breadth, and of the thickness of half an inch. The edges, for about two-thirds of its length, are set with sharp bone teeth, about two inches in length; the other third serving for a handle. With this instrument they attack herrings and sardines, and such other fish as come in shoals.

Every thing of the rope kind which they use in making their various articles, is formed either from thongs of skins, and sinews of animals, or from the flaxen substance of which they manufacture their mantles. The sinews were sometimes so remarkably long that it was hardly possible they could have belonged to any other animal than the whale. The same conjecture may be hazarded with regard to the bones of which they make their instruments and weapons.

Their principal tools are the chissel and the knife. The former consists of a flat long piece, fastened into a wooden handle. A stone is their mallet, and a

bit of fish-skin their polisher. Some of these chissels were nine or ten inches in length, and three or four in breadth; but they were generally considerably smaller. Some of their knives are very large, and their blades are crooked; the edge being on the back or convex part.

Their language is neither harsh nor disagreeable farther than proceeds from their pronouncing the k and h with less softness than we do. They have one sound which is very frequent, and not used by us; it is formed in a particular manner by clashing their tongue partly against the roof of the mouth. It is difficult to represent this sound by English letters, unless from Iszthl.

They had scarce sailed out of the Sound when there was a perfect hurricane, so that Captain Cook deemed it exceedingly dangerous to run any longer before it; he therefore brought the ships to with their heads to the south. In this situation the Resolution sprung a leak in her starboard quarter, which, at first, alarmed them extremely; but, after the water was baled out, which kept them employed till midnight, it was kept under by one pump. The wind having, in the evening, veered to the southward, its fury in some measure abated, upon which they stretched to the west; but about eleven the gale again increased, and continued till five the next morning, when the storm began to moderate.

About seven o'clock in the evening of May the 1st, they descried land at the distance of twelve or fourteen leagues. At four the next morning the coast was seen from S. E. to N. by W. the nearest part of it being five or six leagues distant. At six o'clock, making a nearer approach to the land, they steered N. W. by N. and between eleven and twelve passed a cluster of

little islands situate near the continent, to the northward of the southern point of an extensive bay. An arm of this bay seemed to extend in towards the north, behind a round lofty mountain that stands between it and the sea. To this mountain Captain Cook gave the name of Mount Edgecumbe; and the point of land projecting from it he called Cape Edgecumbe. The latitude of this cape is 57° 3′ N. longitude 224° 7′ E. The land, except in some parts towards the sea, is of a considerable height, abounding with hills. Mount Edgecumbe, which far out-tops all the rest, was entirely covered with snow, as were also the other elevated hills; but the lower ones, and the flatter spots near the sea, were destitute of it, and covered with wood.

Early on the 3d, Mount Edgecumbe bore south 54° east, a large inlet, north 50° east; and the most advanced point of land towards the N. W. lying under a very lofty peaked mountain, which obtained the appellation of Mount Fair-Weather, bore N 32° W. The inlet they named Cross Sound, having first observed it on the day so marked in their calendar. The south-eastern point of this sound is an elevated promontory, which was distinguished by the name of Cross Cape. To the point under the above-mentioned peaked mountain, distant twelve or thirteen leagues, they gave the name of Cape Fair-Weather. Mount Fair-Weather is the highest of a chain or ridge of mountains that rise at the north-western entrance of Cross Sound, and extend towards the north-west, parallel with the coast. These mountains were covered with snow, from the highest summit down to the sea-coast; except a few places where trees seemed to rise as it were from the sea.

On the 26th, at mid-day, the nearest land was at the

distance of about eight leagues. In a north-easterly direction there appeared to be a bay, and an island near its southern point, covered with wood. This is probably the place where Beering anchored. Southward of the bay (which Captain Cook named Beering's Bay, in honour of the discoverer) the ridge of mountains already mentioned is interrupted by a plain of several leagues in extent, beyond which the sight was unbounded.

On the 10th they were about three leagues distant from the coast of the continent, which extended from E. $\frac{1}{2}$ N. to N. W. $\frac{1}{2}$ W. To the westward of the latter direction was an island at the distance of six leagues. A point which Captain Cook named Cape Suckling, projects towards the north-east end of this island. The extremity of the cape is low, but, within it, stands a hill of considerable height, which is divided from the mountains by low land; so that the cape, at a distance, has an insular appearance. On the north side of Cape Suckling is a bay, which seemed to be extensive, and to be sheltered from most winds. Captain Cook had some thoughts of repairing to this bay, in order to stop the leak of his ship, all their endeavours to effect that purpose at sea having proved fruitless. They therefore steered for the cape; but, having only variable light breezes, advanced towards it slowly. Before night, however, they had approached near enough to see some low land projecting from the cape to the north-west; they also observed some little islands in the bay, and several elevated rocks between the cape and the north-eastern extremity of the island. As there appeared to be a passage on each side of these rocks, they continued steering thither the whole night. Early the next morning the wind shifted, and the captain relinquished his

design of going into the bay, and bore up for the west end of the island. There being a calm about ten o'clock, he embarked in a boat, and landed on the island, with a view of seeing what lay on the other side; but finding that the hills were at a greater distance than he expected, and that the way was woody and steep, he laid aside that intention. On a small eminence near the shore, he left, at the foot of a tree, a bottle containing a paper, on which the names of the ships, and the date of their discovery, were inscribed: he also inclosed two silver two-penny pieces of English coin, which had been furnished him by Dr. Kaye, and distinguished the island by the name of Kay's Island. It does not exceed twelve leagues in length, and its breadth is not above a league and a half in any part of it. The S. W. point is a naked rock, considerably elevated above the land within it. There is also a high rock lying off it, which when seen in some particular directions, has the appearance of a ruinous castle. The island terminates towards the sea in bare sloping cliffs, with a beach consisting of large pebbles, intermixed in some places with a clayey sand. The cliffs are composed of a blueish stone or rock, and are, except in a few parts, in a soft or mouldering state. Some parts of the shore are interrupted by small vallies and gullies, in each of which a rivulet or torrent rushes down with a considerable degree of impetuosity; though, perhaps, only furnished from the snow, and lasting no longer than till the whole is dissolved. These vallies are filled with pine-trees; and they also abound in other parts of the island, which, indeed, is covered as it were with a broad girdle of wood. The trees, however, are far from being of an extraordinary growth, few of them seeming to be larger

than what a person might grasp round with his arms, and their general height being forty or fifty feet; so that they would be of no great service for shipping, except as materials for making top-gallant masts, and other small things. Neither the Canadian pine nor cypress, were to be seen.

A crow was seen flying about the wood; two or three white-headed eagles, like those of Nootka, were also observed; besides another species equally large, which had a white breast. Captain Cook likewise saw, in his passage from the ship to the shore, a number of fowls sitting on the water or flying about, the principal of which were gulls, burres, shags, ducks, or large petrels, divers, and quebrantahuesses. The divers were of two sorts; one very large, whose colour was black, with a white belly and breast; the other of a smaller size, with a long and a more pointed bill. The ducks were also of two species; one brownish, with a dark blue or blackish head and neck; the other smaller, and of a dirty black colour. The shags were large and black, having a white spot behind the wings. The gulls were of the common sort, flying in flocks. There was also a single bird flying about, apparently of the gull kind, whose colour was a snowy white, with some black along part of the upper side of its wings. At the place where they landed, a fox came from the verge of the wood, and eyeing them with little emotion, walked leisurely on, without manifesting any signs of fear. He was not of a large size, and his colour was a reddish yellow. Two or three small seals were likewise seen near the shore; but no traces were discovered of inhabitants having ever been in the island.

At the north-east end of Kaye's Island stands another

island, extending N. W. and S. E. about nine miles, to within the same distance of the north-western boundary of the bay mentioned before, to which the appellation of Comptroller's Bay was given. At noon, the next day, the eastern point of a spacious inlet bore W. N. W. about three leagues distant. From Comptroller's Bay to this point, which the captain named Cape Hinchinbroke, the direction of the coast is nearly east and west: beyond this it appeared to incline towards the south. The wind was now south-easterly, and being menaced with a fog and a storm, Captain Cook was desirous of getting into some place to stop the leak, before they had another gale to encounter. They therefore steered for the inlet, which they had no sooner reached than the weather became exceedingly foggy, and it was deemed necessary that the ships should be secured in some place or other, till the sky should clear up. With this view they hauled up close under Cape Hinchinbroke, and cast anchor before a small cove, over a clayey bottom, in eight fathoms water, at the distance of about two furlongs from the shore.

Soon after they had anchored, the boats were hoisted out, some to fish and others to sound. The seine, at the same time, was drawn in the cove, but without success, as it was torn. At intervals the fog cleared away, and afforded a view of the neighbouring land. The cape was one league distant, the western point of the inlet five leagues; and the land on that side extended to W. by N. Between this point and N. W. by W. they could discern no land. The most westerly point they had in view on the north shore was at the distance of two leagues. Betwixt this point and the shore under which the ships now lay at anchor, is a bay about

three leagues deep, on the south-eastern side of which are several coves; and, in the middle, stand some rocky islands.

Mr. Gore was dispatched in a boat to these islands, in order to shoot some birds that might serve for food. He had scarcely reached them when about twenty natives appeared, in two large canoes; upon which he returned to the ships, and they followed him. They were unwilling, however, to venture alongside, but kept at a little distance, shouting aloud, and clasping and extending their arms alternately. They then began a kind of song, much after the manner of the inhabitants of King George's or Nootka Sound. Their heads were strewed with feathers, and one of them held out a white garment, as, it was supposed, a token of friendship; while another, for near a quarter of an hour, stood up in the canoe, entirely naked, with his arms extended like a cross, and motionless. Their canoes were constructed upon a different plan from those of Nootka. The frame consisted of slender laths, and the outside was formed of the skins of seals, or other animals of a similar kind. Though our navigators returned their signs of amity, and endeavoured by the most expressive gestures to encourage them to come alongside, they were unable to prevail upon them.

The wind, during the night, blew hard and in squalls, with rain, and thick hazy weather. The next morning, the wind becoming more moderate, and the weather in some measure clearing up, they got up their anchors and made sail, in order to search for some convenient place where they might stop the leak, as their present station was too much exposed for that purpose. After they had passed the north-west point of the bay before

which their ships anchored, they found that the coast, on that side, inclined to the eastward. They did not follow it, but proceeded on their course to the northward, for a point of land which they observed in that direction.

The Americans who had visited them the preceding day, came off again in the morning, in five or six canoes; but as they did not come till after the vessels were under sail, they were unable to reach them, though they followed them for a considerable time. In the afternoon the unfavourable weather returned, and about eight, o'clock they were obliged, by the violence of the squalls, to cast anchor in thirteen fathoms water, in a bay.

Though the weather was so turbulent, the natives were not deterred from paying them a visit. Three came off in two canoes; two men in one, and one in the other, being the number that each canoe could carry. These men had each a stick, of the length of about three feet, with the large feathers, or wings of birds, fastened to it, which they frequently held up, probably as tokens of peace. The treatment these natives received from our navigators induced many others to visit them between one and two on the following morning, in both great and small canoes. Some of them ventured on board the Resolution, though not before some of the sailors had stepped into their boats. Among those who came on board was a middle-aged man, who, as was afterwards found, was the chief. His dress was made of the skin of the sea-otter, and he had on his head such a cap as is worn by the inhabitants of Nootka, embellished with sky-blue glass beads. He appeared to value these much more than white glass beads. Any kind of beads, however, seemed to be in high estima-

tion among these people, who readily gave in exchange for them whatever they had, even their fine sea-otter skins. They were very desirous of iron, but absolutely rejected small bits, and wanted pieces nine or ten inches long at least, and of the breadth of three or four fingers. They obtained but little of this commodity, as, by this time, it was become rather scarce. The points of some of their spears were of this metal; others were of copper; and a few were of bone; of which last the points of their arrows, darts, &c. were formed. The chief could not be prevailed upon to venture below the upper deck, nor did he and his companions continue long on board. It was necessary to watch them narrowly, as they soon manifested an inclination for thieving. At length, when they had been three or four hours alongside the Resolution, they all quitted her, and repaired to the Discovery, which ship none of them had before been on board of, except one man, who came from her at this very time, and immediately returned to her in company with the others. As soon as they had departed from the Resolution, Captain Cook dispatched a boat to sound the head of the bay, for, as the wind was moderate at present, he had an intention of laying the ship on shore, if a proper place could be found for the process of stopping the leak. Soon afterwards, all the Americans quitted the Discovery, and made their way towards the boat. The officer who was in her, observing their approach, returned to the ship, and all the canoes followed him. The crew of the boat had no sooner repaired on board, leaving in her, by way of guard, two of their number, than several of the natives stepped into her: some of them presented their spears before the two men, while others loosened the rope by

which she was fastened to the ship, and the rest were so daring as to attempt to tow her away. But the moment they saw that the English were preparing to oppose them, they let her go, stepped out of her into their own boats, and made signs to persuade them to lay down their arms, being, to all appearance, perfectly unconcerned.

This attempt, though a very bold one, was scarcely equal to what they had meditated on board the Discovery, where, looking down all the hatchways, and observing no one except the officer of the watch, and one or two others, their leader doubtless imagined that she might be plundered with ease, particularly as she was stationed at some distance from the Resolution. It was unquestionably with this intent that the natives went off to her. Several of them went on board without the least ceremony, and drawing their knives, made signs to the officer, and the other people upon deck, to keep off, and began to search for plunder. The first thing they laid hold of was the rudder of one of the boats, which they immediately threw overboard to those of their party who had continued in their canoes. But before they had time to find another object that struck their fancy, the ship's crew were alarmed, and many of them armed with cutlasses, came upon deck. On observing this, the plunderers all sneaked off into their canoes, with evident marks of indifference.

As they were on the point of weighing anchor, in order to proceed further up the bay, the wind began to blow as violently as before, and was attended with rain, insomuch that they were obliged to bear away the cable and lie fast. In the evening, perceiving that the gale did not abate, and thinking that it might be some

time before an opportunity of getting higher up presented itself, Captain Cook was determined to heel the ship in their present station; and, with that view, caused her to be moored with a kedge-anchor and hawser. One of the sailors, in heaving the anchor out of the boat, was carried overboard by the buoy-rope, and accompanied the anchor to the bottom. In this very hazardous situation he had sufficient presence of mind to disengage himself, and came up to the surface of the water, where he was immediately taken up, with a dangerous fracture in one of his legs.

Early the following morning they heeled the ship, in order to stop the leak, which, on ripping off the sheathing, was found to be in the seams. While the carpenters were employed in this business, others filled the water-casks at a stream not far from their station. The Americans paid them another visit this morning: those who came off first were in small canoes; others arrived afterwards in large ones. In one of these great canoes were twenty women and one man, besides several children.

Their station was on the eastern side of the sound, in a place distinguished by the appellation of Snug Corner Bay. Captain Cook, accompanied by some of his officers, went to take a survey of the head of it on the 16th, and they found that it was sheltered from all winds, and had a muddy bottom at the depth of from seven to three fathoms. The land near the shore is low; partly wooded and partly clear. The clear ground was covered with snow, but very little remained in the woods. The summits of the hills in the neighbourhood were covered with wood; but those that were at a greater distance

inland, had the appearance of naked rocks involved in snow.

On the 17th they weighed anchor at four in the morning, and steered a N. W. course, with a gentle breeze at east-north-east. Soon after they had made sail the Americans visited them again, seemingly with no other view than to gratify their curiosity, for they did not enter into any traffic. When our navigators had reached the north-western point of the arm wherein they had anchored, they observed that the flood-tide came into the inlet, by the same channel through which they had entered. This circumstance did not much contribute to the probability of a passage to the north through the inlet, though it did not make entirely against it. After they had passed the point just mentioned, they met with much foul ground, and many sunken rocks. The wind now failed them, and was succeeded by calms and variable light airs, so that they had some difficulty in extricating themselves from the danger that threatened. At last they cast anchor in about thirteen fathoms water, under the eastern shore, about four leagues to the northward of their last station. Though the weather, in the morning, had been very hazy, it cleared up afterwards, so as to afford them a distinct view of all the surrounding land, particularly towards the north, where it appeared to close. This gave them but little hope of meeting with a passage that way. That he might be enabled to form a better judgment, Captain Cook sent Mr. Gore, with two armed boats, to examine the northern arm; and at the same time dispatched the master, with two other boats, to survey another arm that seemed to incline towards the east. Both of them returned

at night. The Master reported that the arm to which he had been sent communicated with that they had last quitted, and that one side of it was formed by a cluster of islands. Mr. Gore said that he had seen the entrance of an arm, which, he thought, extended a considerable way to the north-eastward, and by which a passage might probably be found. On the other hand, Mr. Roberts, one of the mates, who had accompanied Mr. Gore on this occasion, gave it as his opinion, that they saw the head of this arm. The variation of these two opinions, and the circumstance before-mentioned of the flood-tide entering the inlet from the southward, rendered the existence of a passage this way extremely uncertain; Captain Cook therefore determined to employ no more time in seeking a passage in a place that afforded so small a prospect of success, particularly as the wind was now become favourable for getting out to sea.

The next morning they weighed, and made sail to the southward down the inlet, with a light northerly breeze. They met with the same broken ground as on the preceding day, but soon extricated themselves from it. They were enabled to shorten their way out to sea, by discovering another passage into this inlet, to the south-west of that by which they entered. It is separated from the other by an island that extends eighteen leagues in the direction of south-west and north-east, to which Captain Cook gave the appellation of Montagu Island.

There are several islands in the south-western channel. Those which are situate in the entrance next the open sea, are elevated and rocky. Those that are within are low; and as they were totally free from snow,

and covered with wood and verdure, they were for this reason denominated Green Islands.

On the 19th they steered for the channel between the Green Islands and Montagu Island, which is about two leagues and a half in breadth. Having got out into the open sea by six in the evening, they discovered that the coast trended west by south, as far as the eye could possibly reach.

The inlet which they had now quitted was distinguished by Captain Cook with the name of Prince William's Sound. The natives whom they saw were in general of the middling stature, though many of them were under it. They were square, or strong-chested, with short thick necks, and large broad visages, which were, for the most part, rather flat. The most disproportioned part of their body appeared to be their heads, which were of a great magnitude. Their teeth were of a tolerable whiteness, broad, well set, and equal in size. Their noses had full, round points, turned up at the tip; and their eyes, though not small, were scarcely proportioned to the largeness of their faces. They had black hair, which was strong, straight, and thick. Their beards were, in general, thin, or deficient; but the hairs growing about the lips of those who have them were bristly or stiff, and often of a brownish colour; and some of the elderly men had large, thick, straight beards. Though, for the most part, they agree in the formation of their persons, and the largeness of their heads, the variety in their features is considerable. Very few, however, can be said to be handsome, though their countenances usually indicated frankness, vivacity, and good-nature; and yet some of them shewed a reserve and sullenness in their aspect. The faces of some of

the women are agreeable; and many of them, but principally the younger ones, may easily be distinguished from the other sex, by the superior delicacy of their features. The complexion of some of the females, and of the children, is white, without any mixture of red. Many of the men, whom they saw naked, had rather a swarthy cast, which was scarcely the effect of any stain, as it is not their custom to paint their bodies.

The men, women, and children, are all clothed in the same manner. Their ordinary dress is a sort of close frock, or rather robe, which sometimes reaches only to the knees, but generally down to the ancles. It has, at the upper part, a hole just sufficient to admit the head, with sleeves reaching to the wrists. These frocks are composed of the skins of various animals, such as the grey fox, racoon, pine-martin, sea-otter, seal, &c. and they are commonly worn with the hairy side outwards. Some of the natives have their frocks made of the skins of fowls, with only the down left on them, which they glue upon other substances. There is a sort of cape, or collar, to a few of them, and some have a hood; but the other is the more customary form, and appears to constitute their whole dress in fair weather. They put over this, when it is rainy, another frock, made with some degree of ingenuity from the intestines of whales, or of some other large animal, prepared with such skill, as to resemble, in a great measure, our gold-beater's leaf. It is formed so as to be drawn tight round the neck; and its sleeves extend down to the wrist, round which they are fastened with a string. When they are in their canoes, they draw the skirts of this frock over the rim of the hole in which they sit, so that the water is prevented from entering.

Though the inhabitants of this inlet, in general, do not cover their legs or feet, yet some of them wear a kind of skin stockings, reaching half-way up their thighs. Few of them are without mittens for their hands, formed from the skins of a bear's paws. Those who wear any thing on their heads, resemble, in this particular, the people of Nootka, having high truncated conical caps, composed of straw, and sometimes of wood.

Both the men and women perforate their ears with several holes, about the outer and lower part of the edge, wherein they suspend small bunches of beads. They also perforate the septum of the nose, through which they often thrust the quill-feathers of birds, or little bending ornaments, made of a tubulous shelly substance, strung on a stiff cord, of the length of three or four inches, which give them a ridiculous and grotesque appearance. But the most extraordinary ornamental fashion, adopted by some of the natives, of both sexes, is their having the under lip cut quite through lengthwise, rather below the swelling part. This incision frequently exceeds two inches in length, and either by its natural retraction while the wound is still fresh, or by the repetition of some artificial management, assumes the appearance and shape of lips, and becomes sufficiently large to admit the tongue through. This happened to be the case, when a person with his under lip thus slit was first seen by one of the sailors, who immediately exclaimed, that the man had two mouths; which, indeed, it greatly resembles. They fix in this artificial mouth a flat, narrow kind of ornament, made principally out of a solid shell, or bone, cut into small narrow pieces, like teeth, almost down to the base, or thick part, which has at each end a projecting bit, that

serves to support it when put into the divided lip; the cut part then appearing outwards. Some of them only perforate the lower lip into separate holes; on which occasion the ornament consists of the same number of distinct shelly studs, the points of which are thrust through these holes, and their heads appear within the lip, not unlike another row of teeth under their natural ones.

The men often paint their faces of a black colour, and of a bright red, and sometimes of a bluish or leaden hue; but not in any regular figure. The women puncture, or stain, the chin with black, that comes to a point in each of their cheeks. The bodies of these people are not painted, which may probably be owing to the scarcity of materials for that purpose; all the colours which they brought for sale being in very small quantities. Upon the whole, we have in no country seen savages who take more pains than these do to ornament, or rather to disfigure, their persons.

Their canoes are of two sorts; the one large and open, the other small and covered. Their weapons, and implements for hunting and fishing, are the same with those used by the Greenlanders and Esquimaux. Many of their spears are headed with iron, and their arrows are generally pointed with bone. For defensive armour they have a sort of jacket, or coat of mail, formed of laths, fastened together with sinews, which render it very flexible, though it is so close as not to admit a dart or arrow. It serves only to cover the trunk of the body, and may, not improperly, be compared to the stays worn by women.

Leaving Prince William's Sound on the 20th of May, they steered to the S. W. with a gentle breeze, which

was succeeded by a calm at four o'clock the next morning, and that calm was soon after followed by a breeze from S. W. They passed a lofty promontory, which having been discovered on Princess Elizabeth's birthday, Captain Cook called it Cape Elizabeth. As they could see no land beyond it, they flattered themselves that it was the western extremity of the continent; but they were soon convinced that they were mistaken, fresh land appearing in sight, bearing W. S. W. The wind had now encreased to a strong gale, and forced them to a considerable distance from the coast. On the 22d new land was seen, bearing S. W. and afterwards more land was discovered, extending to the southward; on which was seen a ridge of mountains, with summits covered with snow, behind the first land, which they supposed to be an island, there appearing on it but an inconsiderable quantity of snow. This the captain supposed to be what Beering called Cape Hermogenes.

On the 25th they steered along the coast, and perceived that the land of Cape St. Hermogenes was an island, about six leagues in circumference, separated from the coast by a channel of about one league in breadth. Some rocks lie above water, a league and a half to the north of this island. About noon it bore S. E. distant eight leagues; the land to the N. W. extending from S. $\frac{1}{2}$ W. to near W. In the last direction it ended in a low point, named Point Banks, the ship was, at this time, in the latitude of 58° 41′, longitude 207° 44′. In this situation the land was in sight, bearing N. W. which, it was imagined, connected Cape Elizabeth with this south-west land. When they approached it, they saw it was a group of high islands and rocks, and consequently unconnected with any other

land. From the nakedness of their appearance, they were denominated the Barren Isles.

They intended to have passed through one of the channels by which these islands are divided; but, a strong current setting against them, they went to the leeward of them all. The weather, which had been thick and hazy, cleared up towards the evening, and they perceived a very lofty promontory, whose elevated summit appeared above the clouds, forming two exceedingly high mountains. This promontory the captain named Cape Douglas. The coast seemed to form a large deep bay, between this point and Cape Douglas; which, from their observing some smoke upon Point Banks, received the name of Smoky Bay. On the 26th they perceived more land, extending from Cape Douglas to the north, which consisted of a chain of very high mountains; one of which, being much more conspicuous than the rest, obtained the name of Mount St. Augustin.

Between Cape Elizabeth and a lofty promontory, named Cape Bede, is a bay, in which there appeared to be two snug harbours. They stood into this bay, and might have anchored there in twenty-three fathom water: but Captain Cook having no such intention, they tacked, and stood to the westward, with a very strong gale, accompanied with rain and hazy weather.

On the 30th they anchored in nineteen fathoms water, under the shore to the eastward. Two canoes, with a man in each, came off to the ship about noon. It cost them some labour to paddle across the strong tide; and they hesitated a little, before they dared venture to approach the ship. One of them was very loquacious, but to no purpose, for not a syllable he said was under-

stood: while he was talking, he kept pointing continually to the shore, which they supposed to be an invitation to go thither. Captain Cook made them a present of a few trifles, which he conveyed to them from the quarter-gallery. These people strongly resembled those they had seen in Prince William's Sound, both in dress and person: their canoes were also constructed in the same manner.

When the flood came they weighed, and the canoes quitted them. They stood over to the western shore, with a fresh gale at N. N. E. This, with the point on the opposite shore, contracted the breadth of the channel to about four leagues, through which ran a prodigious tide. It had a terrible appearance, as they were ignorant whether the water was thus agitated by the stream, or by the dashing of the waves against sands or rocks. Meeting with no shoal, they concluded it to be the former, but they afterwards found themselves mistaken. They kept the western shore aboard, that appearing to be the fairest. They had a depth of thirteen fathoms near the shore, and two or three miles off upwards of forty. In the evening they anchored under a point of land, bearing north-east, distant about three leagues, and lay there during the ebb.

Till they arrived here, the water retained an equal degree of saltness, both at high and low water, and was as salt as that which is in the ocean,; but now the marks of a river evidently displayed themselves. The water, which was taken up at this ebb, was much fresher than any they had tasted; whence they concluded that they were in a large river, and not in a strait, which had a communication with the northern seas. But, having proceeded thus far, they were an-

him. About three leagues to the northward of this search, he saw another separation in the eastern chain of mountains, through which he supposed it probable the river took a north-east direction; but this, perhaps, was only another branch, and the main channel continued in a northern direction between the two chains of mountains.

The hopes of finding a passage were no longer entertained; but as the ebb was spent, and they were unable to return against the tide, they took the advantage of the latter to get a closer view of the eastern branch; in order to determine whether the low land on the east was an island or not. For this purpose they weighed with the first flood, and stood over for the eastern shore. At eight o'clock a breeze sprung up in an opposite direction to their course, so that they despaired of reaching the entrance of the river. Captain Cook, therefore, dispatched two boats, under the command of Lieutenant King, to make such observations as might enable them to form some tolerable idea of the nature of the river, which the captain denominated the River Turnagain.

It is probable that, by means of this river and its several branches, a very extensive inland communication lies open. They had traced it to the latitude of 60° 30′ and the longitude of 210°, which is upwards of seventy leagues from its entrance, and saw no appearance of its source.

The time spent in the discovery of this great river,* was not regretted, though the delay thus occasioned was an essential loss to our navigators. The season was far

* Captain Cook having here left a blank, Lord Sandwich very judiciously directed it to be called Cook's River.

advanced; and it was now evident that the continent of North America extended much farther to the west than they had reason to expect from the most approved charts. Captain Cook, however, had the satisfaction to reflect, that, if he had not examined this very large river, speculative fabricators of geography would have ventured to assert that it had a communication with the sea to the north, or with Hudson's or Baffin's Bay to the east.

Mr. King was again sent in the afternoon, with two armed boats, with orders from Captain Cook to land on the south-east side of the river, where he was to display the flag, and, in his Majesty's name, to take possession of the country and the river. He was also ordered to bury a bottle in the earth, containing some English coin of 1772, and a paper, whereon were written the names of the ships, and the date of the discovery. The point, where Mr. King landed, was named Point Possession.

On Mr. King's return, he reported, that when he approached the shore he saw eighteen or twenty of the natives, with their arms extended; an attitude, he supposed, meant to signify their peaceable disposition, and to convince him that they were without weapons. Seeing Mr. King and his attendants land, and observing muskets in their hands, they were alarmed, and requested (by expressive signs) that they would lay them down. This was immediately complied with, and then Mr. King and his party were permitted to walk up to them, when they appeared to be very sociable and cheerful. They had with them several dogs, and a few pieces of fresh salmon. Mr. Law, surgeon of the Discovery, and one of the party, purchased a dog, and taking it towards the boat, immediately shot it dead. At this they seem-

ed exceedingly surprized; and, not thinking themselves safe in such company, they walked away; but it presently appeared that they had concealed their spears, and other weapons, in the bushes close behind them. The ground was swampy, and the soil poor and light: it, however, produced some pines, alders, birch, and willows; some rose and current bushes, and a little grass; but there was not a plant in flower to be seen.

When it was high water they weighed anchor, and with a faint breeze stood over to the west shore, where they anchored early the next morning, on account of the return of the flood. Presently after they were visited by several of the natives, in canoes, who bartered their skins, and afterwards parted with their garments, many of them returning perfectly naked. They gave iron the preference to every thing offered them in exchange. The lip ornaments were less in fashion among them than at Prince William's Sound; but those which pass through the nose were more frequent, and, in general, considerably longer. They had, likewise, more embroidered work on their garments, quivers, knife-cases, and many other articles.

Having weighed, they plied down the river with a gentle breeze at south; when, by the inattention of the man at the lead, the Resolution struck, and stuck upon a bank, nearly in the middle of the river. Captain Cook now made a signal for the Discovery to anchor. About five o'clock in the afternoon, as the flood-tide came in, the ship floated off without sustaining any damage, or occasioning the least trouble.

Early on the 3d they cast anchor on the west shore, about two miles below the bluff point. When they were in this station they were visited by many of the

natives, who attended them all the morning; and, indeed, their company was highly acceptable, as they brought with them a quantity of fine salmon, which they exchanged for some trifles. Several hundred weight of it was procured for the two ships, and the greatest part of it split, and ready for drying.

The mountains now, for the first time after their entering the river, were free from clouds, and they perceived a volcano in one of those on the western side. It emits a white smoke, but no fire. The wind continuing southerly, they still tided it down the river. Before their departure from this place, they were again visited by some of the natives, in six canoes, from the eastern shore. For half an hour they remained at a small distance from the ships, gazing at them with a kind of silent surprize, without uttering a syllable. At length they grew courageous, came alongside, and began to barter; nor did they go away till they had parted with their skins and salmon, which were the only articles they had brought to traffic with. The greater part of the skins which they purchased were made up into garments. Some of them, indeed, were in pretty good condition, others old and ragged.

Our navigators intended to go through the passage between St. Hermogenes and the main land; but the wind soon after failed them, and they therefore abandoned the design. They now beheld several columns of smoke on the continent northward of the passage; which were probably meant as signals to attract them thither. The land forms a bay here, a low rocky island lying off the north-west point of it Some other islands of a similar appearance are scattered along the coast between here and Point Banks. The southernmost point

of the main land was named after the day, Cape Witsunday; and a large bay to the west of it was called Whitsuntide Bay.

In standing in for the coast on the 8th, they passed the mouth of Whitsuntide Bay, and perceived land all round the bottom of it. There are some small islands to the west of the bay. To the southward the sea-coast is low, with projecting rocky points, having small inlets between them. They were now in the latitude of 57° 52'; the land here forming a point, it was named Cape Greville.

On the 12th they saw the land about twelve leagues distant, bearing west; and they stood in for it early the next morning. At noon they were within three miles of it; an elevated point, which was named Cape Barnabas, bore N. N. E. at the distance of about ten miles. The point to the south-west had an elevated summit, which terminated in two round hills, and was therefore called Two-headed Point. This part of the coast is principally composed of high hills and deep vallies.

On the 14th the land appeared like two islands. They were up with the southernmost part of this land the next morning, and perceived it to be an island, which obtained the name of Trinity Island.

In the evening they were within a league of small islands. The westernmost point of the continent now in view was called Cape Trinity, it being a low point facing Trinity Island. In this situation they stood over for the island, meaning to work up between that and the main. In standing over towards the island, they met two men in a canoe; paddling from thence to the main: instead of approaching, they seemed carefully to avoid them.

In consequence of a thick fog on the 15th, they steered W. N. W. under such sail, as they could haul the wind with. In the afternoon land was perceived through the fog, bearing N. W. about three miles distant. The fog was dispersed early the next morning, when they found themselves, in some degree, surrounded by land. The extreme of the main, at the north-east, was the point of land seen during the fog: it was named Foggy Cape. Three or four islands bore N. by W. a point with pinnacle-rocks upon it, bore N. W. by W. called Pinnacle Point; and a cluster of islets S. S. E. about nine leagues from the coast.

The weather was clear and pleasant on the 18th. Captain Cook having occasion to send a boat to the Discovery, one of the people aboard her shot a most beautiful bird. It is smaller than a duck, and the colour is black, except that the fore part of the head is white; behind each eye an elegant yellowish white crest arises; the bill and feet are a reddish colour. For some days they saw these birds in large flocks. At day break the next morning they were near the channel between the islands and the continent, and perceived several other islands within those that they had already seen, of various dimensions. But, between these islands and those that they had seen before, there appeared to be a clear channel, for which they steered. Of this group of islands the largest was now upon their left, and is called Kodiak, as they were afterwards informed. Most of these islands are tolerably high, but very barren and rugged; exhibiting very romantic appearances, and abounding with rocks and cliffs.

In the afternoon they had passed all the islands to the south. They found thirty fathoms water in the channel,

and soon after they had got through it, the Discovery, which was two miles astern, fired three guns, and brought to, making a signal to speak with the Resolution. Captain Cook was much alarmed at this; for, as no apparent danger had been observed in the channel, he was apprehensive that the Discovery had sprung a leak, or met with some similar accident. A boat was sent to her, which immediately returned with Captain Clerke, who said that some of the natives in three or four canoes, having followed the ship for some time, at last got under her stern; one of whom made many signs, having his cap off, and bowing in the European manner. A rope was then handed down from the ship, to which he fastened a thin wooden box, and after he had made some more gesticulations, the canoes left the Discovery. It was not imagined that the box contained any thing, till the canoes had departed, when it was accidentally opened, and found to contain a piece of paper carefully folded up, on which some writing appeared, which they supposed to be in the Russian language. To this paper was prefixed the date 1778, and a reference was made therein to the year 1776. Though unable to decypher the alphabet of the writer, they were convinced, by his numerals, that others had preceded them in visiting these dreary regions. At first, Captain Clerke imagined that some Russians had been shipwrecked here; and that, seeing their ships, these unfortunate persons were induced thus to inform them of their situation. Deeply impressed with sentiments of humanity on this occasion, he was in hopes the Resolution would have stopped till they had time to join them; but no such idea ever occurred to Captain Cook, who, if this had really been the case, supposed that the first step which such ship-

wrecked persons would have taken, in order to secure relief, would have been to send some of their people off to the ships in the canoes. He, therefore, rather thought the paper was intended to communicate some information from some Russian trader who had lately visited these islands, to be delivered to any of his countrymen who should arrive; and that the natives, supposing them to be Russians, had brought off the note. Convinced of this, he enquired no farther into the matter, but made sail, and steered to the westward.

They ran all night with a gentle breeze at N. E. and the next morning some breakers were seen within them, distant about two miles; others were soon after seen ahead, and they were innumerable on their larboard bow, and also between them and the land. By holding a south course, they, with difficulty cleared them. These breakers were produced by rocks, many of which were above water. The nearest land was an elevated bluff point, and was named Rock Point; it bore N. about eight leagues distant; the westernmost part of the main bore N. W. and a high round hill, called Halibut Head, bore S. W. distant about thirteen leagues.

The next day they perceived the main land covered with snow; and particularly some hills, whose elevated tops towered above the clouds to a most stupendous height. A volcano was seen on the most south-westerly of these hills, which perpetually threw up immense columns of black smoke; it is at no great distance from the coast. Its figure is a complete cone, and the volcano is at the summit of it: remarkable as it may appear, the wind, at the height to which the smoke of the volcano rose, often moved in an opposite direction to what it did at sea, even in a fresh gale.

Having three hours calm in the afternoon, upwards of a hundred halibuts were caught, some of which weighed upwards of a hundred pounds, and none of them less than twenty. They were highly acceptable. They fished in thirty-five fathoms water, about four miles distant from the shore; during which time they were visited by a man in a small canoe, who came from the large island. When he approached the ship, he uncovered his head, and bowed as the other had done the preceding day, when he came off to the Discovery. His features resembled those of the natives Prince William's Sound, but he was perfectly free from any kind of paint; and his lip had been perforated in an oblique direction, though, at that time, he had not any ornament in it.

The weather was principally cloudy and hazy till the afternoon of the 22d, when the wind shifted to the south-east, attended, as usual, with thick rainy weather. Before the fog they saw no part of the main land, except the volcano and a neighbouring mountain. They made but little progress for some days, having but little wind, and that variable.

On the 25th they got an easterly breeze, and with it, what was very uncommon, clear weather; insomuch that they clearly saw the volcano, the other mountains, and all the main land under them. In the afternoon the weather became gloomy, and afterwards turned to a mist, the wind blowing fresh at east. They derived but little advantage from day-light, the weather being so thick that they could not discover objects at the distance of a hundred yards; but, as the weather was moderate, they ventured to run. About half an hour after four the sound of breakers alarmed them, on their larboard bow; they found twenty-eight fathoms water, and then

twenty-five. They brought the ship to, and anchored in the last depth. Some hours after, the fog being a little dispersed, they discovered the imminent danger they had escaped. They were three quarters of a mile from the north-east side of an island; two elevated rocks were about half a league from them, and from each other. Several breakers also appeared about them; and yet Providence had safely conducted the ships through in the dark, between those rocks, which they should not have attempted to have done in a clear day, and to so commodious an anchoring-place.

On a point, west from the ship, and at the distance of three quarters of a mile, they perceived several natives, and their habitations. To this place they saw two whales towed in, which they supposed had just been killed. A few of the inhabitants occasionally came off to the ships, and engaged in a little traffic, but never continued above a quarter of an hour at a time. They seemed, indeed, remarkably shy; but they were not unacquainted with vessels, similar, in some degree, to the English. Their manner displayed a degree of politeness uncommon to the savage tribes.

On the 28th they weighed, and were wafted up the passage by a light breeze at south; after which they had variable light airs from all directions. There was, however, a rapid tide in their favour, and the Resolution got through before the ebb made. The Discovery was not equally fortunate, for she was carried back, got into the race, and found a difficulty in getting clear of it.

While they lay here they were visited by several of the natives, in separate canoes. They bartered some fishing implements for tobacco. A young man among

them overset his canoe, while he was alongside of one of their boats. He was caught hold of by one of the sailors, but the canoe was taken up by another and carried ashore. In consequence of this accident, the youth was obliged to come into the ship, where he was invited into the cabin, and readily accepted the invitation, without any surprize or embarrassment. He had on an upper garment, resembling a shirt, made of the gut of a whale, or some other large-sea-animal. Under this he had another of the same form, made of the skins of birds, with the feathers on, curiously sewed together; the feathered side placed next the skin. It was patched with several pieces of silk stuff, and his cap was embellished with glass beads. His cloaths being wet, the captain furnished him with others, which he put on with as much readiness as he could have done. From the behaviour of this youth, and that of several others, it evidently appeared that these people were no strangers to Europeans, and to many of their customs.

At low water they towed the ship into the harbour, where they anchored in nine fathoms water. Soon after a native of the island brought another note on board, similar to that which had been given to Captain Clerke. He presented it to Captain Cook; but, as it was written in the Russian language, none could read it. As it could not be of any use to them, and might probably be of consequence to others, the captain returned it to the bearer, accompanied with a few presents; for which he expressed his thanks, as he retired, by several low bows. They were detained by thick fogs and a contrary wind till the 2d of July.

This harbour is called Samganoodha by the natives. It is about a mile broad at the entrance, and runs in

about four miles south by west. It narrows towards the head, the breadth there not exceeding a quarter of a mile. Plenty of good water may be procured here, but not a piece of wood of any kind.

They now steered, with a gentle breeze at S. S. E. to the northward, and met with no obstruction in that course. Nothing remarkable occurred for several days, nor did they make much progress.

On the 16th they found themselves nearer the shore than they expected. Here, between two points, the coast forms a bay, in several parts of which the land could scarcely be seen from the mast-head. Captain Cook dispatched Lieutenant Williamson with orders to go ashore and observe what direction the coast took, and what was the produce of the country, which, when viewed from the ships, had but a sterile aspect.

Mr. Williamson soon returned, and reported that he had landed on the point, and, having ascended the most elevated hill, found that the most distant part of the coast in sight was nearly in a northerly direction. He took possession of the country in the name of his Britannic Majesty, and left on the hill a bottle containing a paper, on which the names of the ships, and of their commanders, and the date of the discovery, were inscribed. The promontory, which he named Cape Newenham, is a rocky point of considerable height. Over it, or within it, two lofty hills rise one behind the other, of which the innermost, or easternmost, is the highest. The country, as far as he could discern, produces not a single tree or shrub. The hills were naked, but on the lower grounds there grew moss and plants of various kinds, very few of which were at this time in flower. He met with no other animal than a doe and

her fawn, and a dead sea-horse or cow that lay upon the beach.

Nothing of consequence occurred from this time till the 21st, when they were under the necessity of anchoring, to avoid the danger of running upon a shoal that had only a depth of five feet. While they lay at anchor, twenty-seven Americans, each in a separate canoe, came off to the ships, which they approached with some degree of caution. As they advanced, they hollowed and opened their arms; thereby intimating, as it was understood, their peaceable intentions. Some of them, at last, came near enough to receive a few trifling articles which were thrown to them. This gave encouragement to the others to venture alongside; and a traffic quickly commenced between them and our navigators, who obtained wooden vessels, bows, darts, arrows, dresses of skins, &c. in exchange for which the natives accepted whatever they offered them. They appeared to be the same sort of people with those that had been seen all along this coast: and they wore in their lips and noses the same species of ornaments, but were not so well cloathed, and were more dirty. They seemed to be perfectly unacquainted with any civilized nation; they were ignorant of the use of tobacco; nor was there seen in their possession any foreign article, unless a knife may be considered as such. This, indeed, was nothing more than a piece of common iron fitted in a handle made of wood, so as to serve the purpose of a knife. They, however, so well knew the use and value of this instrument, that it seemed to be almost the only article they were desirous of.

The hair of most of them was shaved, or cut short

off, a few locks only being left on one side, or behind. They wore, as a covering for their heads, a hood of skins and a bonnet, which was seemingly of wood. One part of their dress was a kind of girdle, made of skin in a very neat manner, with trappings depending from it, and passing betwixt the thighs, so as to conceal the adjacent parts. Their canoes were covered with skins, like those lately seen; but they were broader, and the hole wherein the person sits was wider than in any before met with.

Variable light winds, with showers of rain, prevailed till August the 3d. This afternoon, Mr. Anderson, surgeon of the Resolution, expired, after he had lingered under a consumption for upwards of a twelvemonth. He was a sensible, intelligent young man, and an agreeable companion. He had great skill in his profession, and had acquired a considerable portion of knowledge in other departments of science. Soon after he had resigned his breath, they discovered land to the westward, at the distance of twelve leagues. They supposed it to be an island; and Captain Cook, to perpetuate the memory of the deceased, for whom he had a particular esteem, distinguished it by the name of Anderson's Island. The following day Mr. Law, surgeon of the Discovery, was removed into the Resolution; and Mr. Samuel, the surgeon's first mate of the Resolution, was appointed to succeed Mr. Law as surgeon of the Discovery.

On the 4th they saw land extending from N. N. E. to N. W. Having anchored in thirteen fathoms, they saw the coast extending from E. to N. W. and an island of considerable elevation bearing W. by N. The

land they imagined to be the continent of America. It had a greenish hue, and was apparently destitute of wood, and free from snow.

On the 5th they ran down, and soon after anchored between the island and the continent, in seven fathoms. Captain Cook, accompanied by Mr. King and some other officers, landed upon the island. The coast of the continent seemed to incline to the north, at a low point which they named Point Rodney. They did not see a tree or shrub, either on the island or upon the neighbouring continent. Near the beach where they landed was a considerable quantity of wild purslain, long-wort, pease, &c. some of which they took on board for boiling. They saw several plovers, and other small birds; a fox was also seen. They likewise met with some decayed huts, built partly under ground. At a small distance from that part of the shore where they landed, they found a sledge, which induced Captain Cook to give the island the appellation of Sledge Island. It appeared to be such a one as is used by the Russians in Kamtschatka, for the purpose of conveying goods from one place to another over the snow or ice. It was about twenty inches in breadth, and ten feet in length; had a sort of rail-work on each side, and was shod with bone. Its construction was admirable, and its various parts were put together with great neatness.

After three days further observation, the captain was convinced that the whole was a continued coast. Accordingly they tacked, and steered for its N. W. part, near which they anchored, and which the captain distinguished by the name of Cape Prince of Wales: it is the western extreme of all America hitherto known.

On the 10th they resumed their western course, and

anchored at ten in the forenoon in a spacious bay about two miles from the eastern shore, over a gravelly bottom, at the depth of ten fathoms.

While they were steering for this bay, they observed on the north shore a village, and some people, who seemed to have been thrown into confusion, or fear, at the sight of the ships. At this village Captain Cook proposed to land; and accordingly went with three armed boats, accompanied by some of the officers. Thirty or forty men, each of whom was armed with a spontoon, bow, and arrows, stood drawn up on an eminence near the houses; three of them came down towards the shore on the approach of the gentlemen, and were so polite as to pull off their caps, and make them low bows. Though this civility was returned, it did not inspire them with sufficient confidence to wait for their landing, for, the instant they put the boats ashore, the natives retired. Captain Cook followed them alone, without any thing in his hand, and by signs and gestures prevailed on them to stop, and accept some trifling presents: in return for these they gave him two foxes skins, and a couple of sea-horses teeth. They seemed very timid and cautious; intimating their desire, by signs, that no more people should be suffered to come up. The distribution of a few beads among some of them, soon created a degree of confidence, so that they were not alarmed when the captain was joined by a few more of his people; and, in a short time, a kind of traffic was entered into. In exchange for tobacco, knives, beads, and other articles, they gave a few arrows, and some of their cloathing; but nothing could induce them to part with a spear or a bow. These they held in continual readiness, never quitting them except at one time, when

four or five persons laid theirs down while they favoured the gentlemen with a song and a dance; and even then they placed them in such a manner that they could lay hold of them in a moment.

Their arrows were pointed either with stone or bone, but very few of them had barbs; and some of them had a round blunt point. What use these are applied to was not known, unless it be to kill small animals without damaging the skin. The bows were such as were seen on the American coast; their spontoons or spears were of iron or steel, and of European or Asiatic workmanship; and considerable pains had been taken to embellish them with carving, and inlayings of brass and of a white metal. Several other things, and particularly their cloathing, indicated a degree of ingenuity far surpassing what any one would expect to find among them. These people, unlike all the Americans hitherto seen, had long visages, and were stout and well made: upon the whole, they appeared to be a very different nation. No women, nor children of either sex, were observed, nor any aged persons, except one man whose head was bald; and he was the only one who bore no arms. the other seemed to be select men, and rather under than above the middle age. The elderly man had a black mark across his face, which was not perceived in any others: all of them had their ears perforated, and some had glass beads hanging to them. These were the only fixed ornaments seen about them. Their apparel consisted of a pair of breeches, a cap, a frock, a pair of boots, and a pair of gloves, all made of the skins of deer, dogs, seals, and other animals, and extremely well dressed; some with the hair or fur on, and others without it.

The village was composed both of their winter and their summer habitations; the former are exactly like a vault, the floor of which is sunk below the surface of the earth. One of them, which Captain Cook examined, was of an oval figure, about twenty feet in length, and twelve or more in height; the framing consisted of wood, and the ribs of whales, judiciously disposed, and bound together with small materials of the same kind. Their summer huts were of a tolerable size, and circular, being brought to a point at the top. Slight poles and bones, covered with the skins of sea-animals, composed the framing. Captain Cook examined the inside of one: there was a fire-place just within the door, where a few wooden vessels were deposited, all very dirty. Their bed-places were close to the side, and occupied about one-half of the circuit: some degree of privacy seemed to be observed, for there were several partitions, made with skins. The bed and bedding consisted of deer-skins, and most of them were clean and dry.

After they had remained with these people between two and three hours, they returned on board; and soon after, the wind becoming southerly, they weighed anchor, and stood out of the bay. They steered to the eastward from this station, in order to make a nearer approach to the American coast.

Nothing material occurred till the 17th, when, in the forenoon, they perceived a brightness in the northern horizon, like that reflected from ice, usually called the blink. Little notice was taken of it, from a supposition that it was improbable they should so soon meet with ice. The sharpness of the air, however, and gloominess of the weather, for the two or three preceding days, seem-

ed to indicate some sudden change. About an hour afterwards, the sight of an enormous mass of ice left them no longer in any doubt respecting the cause of the brightness of the horizon. Between two and three o'clock they tacked close to the edge of the ice, in twenty-two fathoms water, unable to stand on any farther; for the ice was perfectly impenetrable, and extended from W. by S. to E. by N. as far as the eye could reach. Here they met with great numbers of sea-horses, some of which were in the water, but far more upon the ice.

At twelve, on the 18th, they were almost five leagues farther to the east. They were, at present, close to the edge of the ice, which was as compact as a wall, and appeared to be at least ten or twelve feet in height: but farther northward, it seemed to be much higher. They now stood to the south, and, after running six leagues, shoaled the water to seven fathoms. At this time, the weather, which had been hazy, becoming clearer, they saw land extending from S. to S. E. by E. at the distance of three or four miles. The eastern extremity forms a point, which was greatly encumbered with ice, on which account it was distinguished by the name of Icy Cape. The other extreme of the land was lost in the horizon; and they had no doubt of its being a continuation of the continent of America. Their present situation was very critical. They were upon a lee-shore in shoal-water; and the main body of the ice to windward was driving down upon them. It was evident that, if they continued much longer between it and the land, it would force them ashore, unless it should chance to take the ground before them. It appeared almost to join the land to leeward, and the only direction that was

free from it was to the S. W. After making a short board to the N. Captain Cook made a signal for the Discovery to tack, and his ship tacked at the same time. The wind proved in some measure favourable, so that they lay up S. W. and S. W. by W.

On the 19th they had a considerable quantity of drift ice about their ships, and the main ice was about two leagues to the north. Between one and two they got in with the edge of it. It was less compact than that which they had observed towards the N. but it was too close, and in too large pieces, to attempt forcing the ships through it. They saw an amazing number of sea-horses on the ice, and as they were in want of fresh provisions, the boats from each ship were dispatched to procure some of them. By seven in the evening they had received on board the Resolution nine of these animals, which, till this time, they had supposed to be sea-cows; so that they were greatly disappointed, particularly some of the sailors, who, on account of the novelty of the thing, had been feasting their eyes for some days past. Nor would they now have been disappointed, nor have known the difference, if there had not been two or three men on board who had been in Greenland, and declared what animals these were, and that no person ever eat of them. Notwithstanding this, they made them serve for provisions, and there were few of the people who did not prefer them to their salt-meat. Their fat, at first, is as sweet as marrow; but, in a few days it becomes rancid, unless it is salted, in which state it will keep much longer. The lean flesh is coarse and blackish, and has a strong taste: and the heart is almost as well tasted as that of a bullock. The fat, when melted, affords a good quantity of oil, which burns very well

in lamps; and their hides, which are of great thickness, were extremely useful about their rigging. The teeth, or tusks, of most of them, were, at this time, of a very small size; even some of the largest and oldest of these animals had them not exceeding half a foot in length. Hence they concluded that they had lately shed their old teeth. They lie upon the ice in herds of many hundreds, huddling like swine, one over the other, and they roar very loud; so that, in the night, or when the weather was foggy, they gave notice of the vicinity of the ice before they could discern it. The whole herd was never found sleeping, some of them being constantly upon the watch. They did not appear to be so dangerous as some authors have represented them, not even when they were attacked. They are, indeed, more so in appearance than in reality. The female will defend her young one to the very last, and at the expence of her own life, whether upon the ice or in the water. Nor will the young one quit the dam, though she should have been killed; so that, if you destroy one you are sure of the other. The dam, when in the water, holds her young one between her fore fins. Notwithstanding their name, (which is supposed to be a corruption of the Russian word Morse) they do not in the least resemble a horse. It is certainly more like a cow; but this resemblance consists in nothing but the snout. In short, it is an animal not unlike a seal, but incomparably larger.

Soon after they had got their sea-horses on board, they were, in a manner, surrounded with the ice; and had no means of clearing it but by steering to the southward, which they did till three o'clock the next morning. At two in the afternoon they fell in with the main ice,

and kept along the edge of it, being partly directed by the roaring of the sea-horses, for they had an exceeding thick fog. Thus they continued sailing till near midnight, when they got in among the loose pieces of ice.

Next morning, the weather clearing up, they saw the American continent extending from S. by E. to E. by S. and, at noon, the distance of the nearest part was five leagues. They continued to steer for it till eight o'clock, in order to obtain a nearer view of it, and to search for a harbour; but seeing nothing that had the appearance of one, they again stood to the north with a gentle westerly breeze.

Having often changed their course in order to avoid the ice, on the 27th, after standing to the westward, they were close in with the edge of the ice, which lay E. N. E. and W. S. W. as far in each of those directions as the eye could reach. There being but little wind, Captain Cook went with the boats to examine the state of the ice. He found it consisted of loose pieces, of various extent, and so close together, that he could scarcely enter the outer edge with a boat; and it was as impracticable for the ships to enter it, as if it had been so many rocks. He particularly remarked, that it was all pure transparent ice, except the upper surface, which was rather porous; it seemed to be wholly composed of frozen snow, and to have been all formed at sea. A thick fog, which came on while the captain was thus employed with the boats, hastened him aboard sooner than he could have wished, with one sea-horse to each ship. They had killed many, but could not wai to bring them off. The wind veering to the north-west, and blowing a stiff gale, they stretched to the S. W.

On the 29th they perceived land, bearing S. W. by W. In a short time after this more land was seen, bearing W. The weather, which was now very hazy, cleared up. This enabled them to have a tolerable view of the coast, which resembles, in every respect, the opposite coast of America; that is, low land next the sea, with higher land farther back. It was totally destitute of wood, and even of snow; but was, probably, covered with a mossy substance, that gave it a brownish hue. In the low ground that lay between the sea and the high land, was a lake, extending to the south eastward, farther than they could see. A point, which had the appearance of an island, connected with another, received the name of Cape North.

The season was now so far advanced, and the time when the frost generally sets in was so near, that Captain Cook did not think it consistent with prudence to make any farther attempts to discover a passage into the Atlantic Ocean this year, in any direction, so small was the probability of success. His attention was now directed to the search of some place where they might recruit their wood and water; and the object that principally occupied his thoughts was, how he should pass the winter, so as to make some improvements in navigation and geography, and, at the same time, be in a condition to return to the northward the ensuing summer, to prosecute his search of a passage into the Atlantic.

Having stood off till their soundings were eighteen fathoms, they made sail to the eastward, along the coast, which, they were now pretty well convinced, could only be the continent of Asia. Early on the 30th, they steered such a course as they judged most likely to bring

them in with the land. At ten o'clock they obtained a sight of the coast, which was at the distance of four miles, bearing S. W. The inland country, about this part, abounds with hills, some of which are of considerable elevation. The land in general was covered with snow, except a few spots on the coast.

September 1, they again made sail to the east, with a very unsettled wind. The coast now in sight seemed to form several rocky points, that were connected by a low shore, without any appearance of an harbour. At a distance from the sea many hills presented themselves to view, the highest of which were involved in snow: in other respects, the whole country had a naked aspect.

On the 2d, the sun, which they had not seen for near five days, broke out, by which means the coast was, in some degree, freed from the fog; so that they obtained a sight of it, and found that the whole was connected.

As they ranged along the coast, they saw several of the natives, and some of their dwelling-places, which had the appearance of hillocks of earth. Not one of them, however, came off to them; which was rather remarkable, as the weather was sufficiently favourable, and as those whom they had lately visited had no reason to be displeased with them. These people are certainly the Tschutski, whom the Russians, according to Muller's account, had not hitherto subdued.

The Bay of St. Lawrence is, at the entrance, at least five leagues in breadth, and about four leagues deep, growing narrower towards the bottom, where it seemed to be pretty well sheltered from the sea winds, provided there is a competent depth of water for ships. Captain Cook did not wait to examine it, though he

was extremely desirous of finding a convenient harbour in those parts, to which he might resort in the succeeding spring. But he wished to meet with one where wood might be obtained; and he knew that none could be found here.

The more the captain was convinced of his being at present upon the Asiatic coast, the more he was at a loss to reconcile his observations with Mr. Stæhlin's map of the New Northern Archipelago; and he could find no other method of accounting for so important a difference, than by supposing that he had mistaken some part of what Mr. Stæhlin denominates the island of Alaschka, for the continent of America, and had missed the channel by which they are separated. But, even on that supposition, there would still have been a considerable variation. The captain considered it as an affair of some consequence to clear up this point during the present season, that he might have only one object in view in the following one. And as these northerly islands were said to abound with wood, he had some hopes, if he should find them, of procuring a competent supply of that article, of which they now began to stand in great need. With this view he steered over for the coast of America; and the next day, about five o'clock in the afternoon, land was seen, bearing S. $\frac{3}{4}$ E. which they imagined was Anderson's Island, or some other land near it. Early on the 6th, they had a sight of the American coast, near Sledge Island.

On the 7th, they had made a near approach to the land. The next morning they pursued their course along the coast. In the evening they were abreast of a point, which was named Cape Darby; beyond which the coast assumes a more northerly direction. On the

9th they made sail along the coast. They now saw land, and not long afterwards found themselves near a coast covered with wood; a pleasing sight, to which they had not been lately accustomed. The next morning, when they were about three miles from the west shore, Captain Cook, accompanied by Mr. King, went with two boats in search of wood and water. They saw the tracts of foxes and deer upon the beach; in many parts of which there was a great abundance of drift-wood; there was also no want of fresh water. The gentlemen having returned on board, Captain Cook had thoughts of bringing the ships to an anchor here; but the wind then shifting to N. E. and blowing rather on this shore, he stretched over to the opposite one, expecting to find wood there likewise. In the evening they anchored near the southern end of the most northerly island, for such they then imagined it to be. The next morning, however, they found that it was a peninsula, connected with the continent by a low isthmus, on each side of which a bay is formed by the coast. The point of the peninsula was called Cape Denbigh. They observed several of the natives on the peninsula, and one of them came off in a small canoe. Captain Cook gave this man a knife and some beads, with which he appeared to be well pleased; they made signs to him to bring some provisions, upon which he instantly paddled towards the shore. Happening to meet another man coming off, who had two dried salmons, he got them from him; and when he returned to the ship, he refused to give them to any body except Captain Cook. Some of the crew fancied that he asked for him under the name of Capitaine; but in this they were perhaps mistaken. Others of the inhabitants came off soon af-

terwards, and gave them a few dried fish, in exchange for such trifles as they had to barter with them. They shewed no dislike for tobacco, but they were most desirous of knives.

In the afternoon Mr. Gore was dispatched to the peninsula, to procure wood and water; of the former of which articles great plenty was seen upon the beach. They stood off and on with the ships, waiting for Lieutenant Gore, who returned about eight o'clock in the evening, with the launch loaded with wood. He reported, that he had found but little fresh water, and that the wood could not be procured without difficulty, on account of the boats grounding at some distance from the beach. As this was the case, they stood back to the other shore; and the next morning, at eight, all the boats, and a detachment of men, with an officer, were sent to get wood from the place where Captain Cook had landed two days before.

In the afternoon Captain Cook went on shore, and took a walk into the country; which, in those parts where there was no wood, abounded with heath, and other plants, several of which had plenty of berries, all ripe. Scarce a single plant was in flower. The underwood, such as birch, alders, and willows, occasioned walking to be very troublesome among the trees, which were all spruce, and none of which exceeded seven or eight inches in diameter; but some were observed lying on the beach, that were above twice that size. All the drift-wood in these northern parts was fir.

On the 13th, a family of the natives came near the spot were the men were occupied in taking of wood. The captain saw only the husband and wife, and their child, besides a fourth person, who was the most de-

formed cripple he had ever seen. The husband was nearly blind, and neither he, nor his wife, were such well-looking people as many of those whom they had met with on this coast. Both of them had their under lips perforated; and they were in possession of some glass-beads, resembling those they had seen before among their neighbours. Iron was the article that pleased them most. For four knives, which had been formed out of an old iron hoop, the captain obtained from them near four hundred pounds weight of fish, that had been lately caught by them. He gave a few beads to the child, who was a female; upon which the mother immediately burst into tears, then the father, next after him the cripple, and at last, to add the finishing stroke to the concert, the child herself. This music, however, was not of long duration. Before night they had amply furnished the ships with wood, and had conveyed on board about a dozen ton of water to each.

As doubts were still entertained whether the coast upon which they now were belonged to an island, or to the continent of America, Lieutenant King was dispatched by Captain Cook with two boats, well manned and armed, to make such search as might tend to remove all difference of opinion on the subject.

The next day the ships removed over to the bay, on the south-eastern side of Cape Denbigh, where they cast anchor in the afternoon. Not long after several of the inhabitants came off in canoes, and gave them some dried salmon in exchange for trifling articles. Early on the 16th, nine men, each in a separate canoe, paid them a visit, with the sole view of gratifying their curiosity. They approached the ship with caution, and drawing up abreast of each other, under their stern, fa-

voured them with a song; while one of their number made many ludicrous motions with his hands and body, and another beat upon a sort of drum. There was nothing savage, either in the song, or the gestures with which it was accompanied.

Captain Cook took a walk this day over part of the peninsula. He met with very good grass in several places, and scarcely observed a single spot on which some vegetable was not growing. The low land by which this peninsula is united to the continent, abounds with narrow creeks, and likewise with ponds of water, several of which were at this time frozen over. There were numbers of bustards and geese, but they were so shy, that it was impossible to get within musket-shot of them. Some snipes were also seen; and, on the higher grounds, were partridges of two species; where there was wood, musquitoes were numerous. Some of the officers, who went further into the country than Captain Cook did, met with some of the natives, of both sexes, who treated them with civility and kindness.

Lieutenant King returned from his expedition about seven o'clock this evening. The crews of the boats rowed without intermission towards the land, till one in the morning of the 15th. They then set their sails, and stood across the bay, which the coast forms to the westward of Bald Head. They afterwards, about three o'clock, again made use of their oars, and, by two in the afternoon, had got within two miles of Bald Head, under the lee of the high land. At that time all the men in the boat belonging to the Resolution, except two, were so oppressed with fatigue and sleep, that Mr. King's utmost endeavours to make them put on were perfectly ineffectual. They, at length, were so far ex-

hausted, as to drop their oars, and fall asleep at the bottom of the boat. In consequence of this, Mr. King, and two gentlemen who were with him, were obliged to lay hold of the oars; and they landed, a little after three o'clock, between Bald Head and a point that projects to the eastward. Mr. King, upon his landing, ascended the heights, from which he could see the two coasts join, and that the inlet terminated in a small creek, or river, before which there were banks of sand, or mud, and in every part shoal water. The land, for some distance towards the north, was low and swampy; then it rose in hills; and the perfect junction of those, on each side of the inlet, was traced without the least difficulty. From this elevated situation Mr. King could discern many spacious vallies, with rivers flowing through them, well wooded, and bounded by hills of a moderate height. One of the rivers towards the north-west seemed to be considerable; and he was inclined to suppose, from its direction, that it discharged itself into the sea at the head of the bay. Some of his people, penetrating beyond this into the country, found the trees to be of a larger size the further they proceeded. To this inlet Captain Cook gave the name of Norton's Sound.

Captain Cook thought it now high time to quit these northerly regions, and retire to some place for the winter, where he might obtain provisions and refreshments. He did not consider Petropaulowska, or the harbour of St. Peter and St. Paul, in Kamtschatka, as likely to furnish a sufficient supply. As no situation was so convenient for their purpose as the Sandwich Islands, he formed a resolution of repairing to them. But a supply of water being necessary before he could execute that de-

sign, he determined, with a view of procuring this essential article, to search the coast of America for a harbour, by proceeding along it to the southward. If he should not meet with success in that search, his intention was to reach Samganoodha.

On the 18th, an island, seventeen leagues distant from Cape Denbigh, was called Stuart's Island. It is six or seven leagues in circumference. Though some parts of it are of a moderate height, yet, in general, it is low, with some rocks off the western part. The greatest part of the coast of the continent is low land, but they perceived high land up the country. It forms a point opposite the island, which was distinguished by the name of Cape Stephens. They were no sooner without the island, than they steered S. by W. for the most southern part of the continent in sight, till eight in the evening, when, the depth of water having decreased from six fathoms to less than four, they tacked, and this southernmost point of land was named Point Shallow Water.

On the 20th, they reached the northern point of an island, which was called Clerke's Island; and having ranged along its coast till dark, they brought to during the night. Early the next morning they again stood in for the coast, and proceeded along it in quest of an harbour, till twelve o'clock, when finding no probability of success, they left it, and steered S. S. W.

On the 25th, they had a violent gale, when the Resolution sprung a leak, under the starboard-buttock, which was so considerable as to keep one pump constantly employed. The gale ceased on the 26th, when they stood to the eastward, and then the leak gave them no farther trouble.

On the 2d of October they saw the isle of Oonalashka. They hauled into a bay, ten miles to the westward of Samganoodha, known by the appellation of Egoochshac; but finding very deep water, they speedily left it. The natives visited them at different times, bringing with them dried salmon, and other fish, which the sailors received in exchange for tobacco.

The next day they anchored in the harbour of Samganoodha, and, on the 4th, the carpenters were employed in ripping off the sheathing of and under the wale of the Resolution, on the starboard side.

There being now great plenty of berries here, one-third of the people, by turns, had permission to go ashore and gather them. Considerable quantities of them were also brought to them by the inhabitants. If there were any seeds of the scurvy, among the people of either ship, these berries, and the use of spruce beer, which they were allowed to drink every other day, effectually eradicated them. We likewise procured abundance of fish, at first, chiefly salmon, both fresh and dried, which the natives brought. Some of the fresh salmon was in the highest perfection; but there was one sort, which, from the figure of its head, they called hook-nosed, that was but indifferent. Drawing the seine several times, at the head of the bay, they caught many salmon trout, and a halibut that weighed two hundred and fifty-four pounds. They afterwards had recourse to hooks and lines. A boat was sent out every morning, which seldom returned without eight or ten halibut, a quantity more than sufficient to serve all the men. These fish were excellent, and there were few who did not prefer them to salmon.

On the 8th, Captain Cook received, by the hands of

a native of Oonalashka, named Derramoushk, a very singular present, considering the place they were in. It was a rye loaf, or rather a pye in the form of a loaf, as it enclosed some salmon, well seasoned with pepper. This man had brought a similar present for Captain Clerke, and a note for each of the captains, written in a character which none of them understood. It was natural to imagine, that these two presents were from some Russians now in the neighbourhood, and therefore the captains sent, by the same messenger, to these unknown friends, a few bottles of rum, wine, and porter, which they supposed would be highly acceptable. Captain Cook also sent, in company with Derramoushk, Corporal Lediard, of the marines, an intelligent man, for the purpose of gaining farther information; with orders, that if he met with any Russians, he should endeavour to make them understand that they were Englishmen, the friends and allies of their nation. On the 10th, Corporal Lediard returned with three Russian seamen, or furriers, who, with several others, resided at Egoochshac, where they had some store-houses, a dwelling-house, and a sloop of about thirty tons burthen. One of these Russians was either master, or mate, of this vessel. They were all three intelligent, well-behaved men, and extremely ready to give all the information we could desire. But, for want of an interpreter, they found it very difficult to understand each other.

On the 14th, while Captain Cook and Mr. Webber were at a village, not far from Samganoodha, a Russian landed there, who proved to be the principal person among his countrymen in this and the adjacent isles. His name was Erasim Gregorioff Sin Ismyloff. He arrived in a canoe, that carried three persons, attended

by twenty or thirty smaller canoes, each conducted by one man. Immediately after landing, they constructed a small tent for Ismyloff, of materials which they had brought with them, and they afterwards made others for themselves, of their canoes and paddles, which they covered with grass. Ismyloff having invited the captain and Mr. Webber into his tent, set before them some dried salmon and berries. He appeared to be a man of sense; and the captain felt no small mortification in not being able to converse with him except by signs, with the assistance of figures, and other characters. The captain requested him to favour him with his company on board the next day, and accordingly he came with all his attendants. Not only Ismyloff, but also the others affirmed that they were totally unacquainted with the American continent to the northward; and that neither Lieutenant Synd, nor any other Russian, had seen it of late years. They called it by the same name which Mr. Stæhlin has affixed to his large island, that is Alaschka.

According to the information they obtained from Ismyloff and his countrymen, the Russians have made several attempts to gain a footing upon that part of the North American continent, that lies contiguous to Oonalashka and the adjacent islands, but have constantly been repulsed by the inhabitants, whom they represent as a very treacherous people. They made mention of two or three captains, or chief men, who had been murdered by them; and some of the Russians shewed wounds, which they declared they had received there.

The next morning Ismyloff offered Captain Cook a sea-otter skin, which, he said, was worth eighty rou-

bles at Kamtschatka. The captain, however, thought proper to decline the offer; but accepted of some dried fish, and several baskets of the lily, or saranne root. In the afternoon Ismyloff, after having dined with Captain Clerke, left them with all his retinue, but promised to return in a few days. Accordingly, on the 19th, he paid them another visit, and continued with them till the evening of the 21st, when he took his final leave.

In the afternoon of the 23d, they were visited by one Jacob Ivanovitch Soposnicoff, a Russian, who commanded a small vessel at Oomanak. This man seemed very modest, and would drink no strong liquor, of which the other Russians were extremely fond. After our navigators had contracted an acquaintance with these Russians, several of the gentlemen, at different times, visited their settlements on the island, where they always met with friendly treatment. It consisted of dwelling-houses. Besides the Russians, there was a number of the Kamtschadales, and of the Oonalashkans, as servants to the former. Some other natives of this island, who appeared to be independent of the Russians, lived at the same place. Such of them as belonged to the Russians were all of the male sex; and they are either taken, or purchased, from their parents when young. They all reside in the same house, the Russians at the upper end, the Kamtschadales in the middle, and the Oonalashkans at the lower end, where is fixed a capacious boiler for preparing their food, which principally consists of fish, with the addition of wild roots and berries.

As the island furnishes them with subsistence, so it does, in some measure, with clothing. This is chiefly composed of skins. The upper garment, which is made

like a waggoner's frock, reaches down to the knees. Besides this, they wear a waiscoat or two, a pair of breeches, a fur-cap, and a pair of boots, the legs of which are formed of some kind of strong gut, but the soles and upper leathers are of Russian leather. There are Russians settled upon all the most considerable islands between Kamtschatka and Oonalashka, for the sole purpose of collecting furs.

As for the native inhabitants of this island, they are, to all appearance, a very peaceable, inoffensive race of people; and, in point of honesty, they might serve as a pattern to the most civilized nations. They are, in general, rather low of stature, but plump, and well shaped. Their necks are commonly short, and they have swarthy chubby faces. They have black eyes, and small beards. Their hair is long, black, and straight; the men wear it loose behind, and cut before; but the women generally tie it up in a bunch. The dress of both sexes is the same with respect to fashion, the only difference is in the materials. The frock worn by the women is made of the skins of seals; and that of the men, of the skins of birds; both reach below the knees. This constitutes the whole dress of the females. But, over the frock, the men wear another, composed of gut, which water cannot penetrate; it has a hood to it, which is drawn over the head. Some of them wear boots; and all of them wear a sort of oval-snouted cap, made of wood, with a rim that admits the head. Some fix beads to the upper lip under the nostrils; and they all suspend ornaments in their ears. Fish, and other sea animals, birds, roots, berries, and even sea-weed, compose their food. They eat most of their provisions raw. Boiling and broiling were the only methods of cookery that were

seen among them; and the former they in all probability learnt from the Russians.

Captain Cook once happened to be present when the chief of this island made his dinner of the raw head of a large halibut, just caught. When he had finished his meal, the remains of the head being cut in pieces, were given to the servants, who tore off the meat with their teeth, and knawed the bones like so many dogs.

The following is their method of building: they dig in the ground an oblong pit, which rarely exceeds fifty feet in length, and twenty in breadth; but the dimensions are in general smaller. Over this excavation they form the roof of wood, which they cover first with grass, and then with earth, so that the external appearance resembles a dung-hill. Near each end of the roof is left a square opening, which admits the light; one of these openings being intended only for this purpose, and the other being also used to go in and out by, with the assistance of a ladder, or rather a post, in which steps are cut. In some of the houses there is another entrance below, but this is rather uncommon. Round the sides and ends of the habitations, the families, several of which dwell together, have their separate apartments, where they sleep, and sit at work; not on benches, but in a sort of concave trench, dug entirely round the inside of the house, and covered with mats, so that this part is kept pretty clean and decent. The same cannot be said of the middle of the house, which is common to all the families. For, though it is covered with dry grass, it is a receptacle for every kind of dirt.

Their furniture consists of buckets, cans, wooden bowls, spoons, matted baskets, and sometimes a Russian kettle, or pot. All these utensils are made in a very

neat manner; and yet no other tools were seen among them than the knife and the hatchet. No fire-place, or any kind of weapons was seen among them. They are lighted, as well as heated, by lamps; which, though simple, effectually answer the purpose for which they are intended. They manufacture mats and baskets of grass, which are both neat and strong. All sewing is performed by the females, who, instead of thread, use fibres and sinews, and needles formed of bone.

Having sailed October 26, from Samganoodha harbour, they stood to the westward. The captain now intended to proceed to the Sandwich Islands, in order to pass a few of the winter months there, if they should meet with the necessary refreshments, and then advance in their progress to Kamtschatka, so as to arrive there about the middle of May in the ensuing year. During their course, nothing remarkable occurred till November the 25th, when land was discovered, extending from south-south-east to west. They now perceived that their discovery of the group of the Sandwich Islands had been very imperfect, those which they had visited in their progress northward all lying to the leeward of their present station. Unable to weather the island, they bore up, and ranged to the westward. They now perceived people on many parts of the shore, and several houses and plantations. The country appeared to be well supplied with wood and water. Some canoes came off about noon, and, when they got alongside, many of the conductors of them came into the ship without hesitation. They were of the same nation as those islanders more to the leeward which had already been visited by our navigators. They supplied them with a quantity of cuttle-fish, in exchange for nails

and iron. They brought but little fruit or roots, but said they had plenty of them on their island, as well as of hogs and fowls. Expecting the natives would return the next day with the produce of their island, they plyed off the whole night, and stood close in shore the next morning. At first they were visited but by few, but, towards noon, many of them appeared, bringing with them potatoes, tarro, bread-fruit, plantains, and small pigs, all which were bartered for iron tools and nails.

On the 30th, being off the north-east end of the island, some more canoes came off. These principally belonged to Terreeoboo, a chief who came in one of them. He made Captain Cook a present of two or three pigs, and they procured a little fruit by bartering with the other people. In about two hours they all departed, except seven or eight, who chose to remain on board. Soon after, a double sailing-canoe arrived to attend upon them, which they towed astern the whole night. In the evening another island was seen to the windward, called by the natives Owhyhee.

Perceiving that they could fetch Owhyhee, they stood for it on December the 1st, when their visitors from another island called Mowee thought proper to embark in their canoes and went ashore. The next morning, to their great surprise, they saw the summits of the mountains covered with snow. Drawing near the shore, some of the natives approached them, who appeared a little shy at first, but they prevailed on some of them to come on board; and at length induced them to return to the island, to bring a supply of what they wanted. They had plenty of company after these had reached the

shore, who brought with them a tolerable supply of pigs, fruit, and roots.

Having procured a great quantity of sugar cane, and having, upon a trial, discovered that a decoction of it made very palatable beer, Captain Cook ordered some of it to be brewed for their general use; but, on the broaching of the casks, not one of the crew would even taste it. The captain, therefore, ordered that no grog should be served in either of the ships; while he and his officers continued to drink this sugar-cane-beer whenever materials could be procured for brewing it. Some hops, which they had on board, improved it much; and it was, doubtless, extremely wholesome; though the captain's inconsiderate crew could not be persuaded but that it was injurious to their health.

Keeping at some distance from the coast till the 13th, they stood in again six leagues more to windward; and, after trading with the natives who came off to them, returned to sea.

On the 18th they had thunder, lightning, and rain. At day-break, a most dreadful surf was breaking upon the shore, by which it was evident they had been in the most imminent danger; nor were they yet secure, the wind veering more easterly; so that for a considerable time they were but just able to keep their distance from the coast. Their situation was rendered the more alarming by the leach-rope of the main top-sail giving way, in consequence of which the sail was rent in two; the top-gallant-sails giving way in the same manner. They soon, however, got others to the yards, and left the land astern. The Discovery was at some distance o the north, entirely clear from the land; nor did she appear in sight till eight o'clock.

They were visited, in the afternoon of the 20th, by some of the natives, who came off in their canoes, bringing with them pigs and plantains. They were afterwards visited by others, laden with provisions. The people continued trading with them till four o'clock in the afternoon, at which time they had got a good supply. They met with less reserve and suspicion in their intercourse with the people of this island than they had ever experienced among any tribe of savages. They frequently sent up into the ship the articles they meant to barter, and afterwards came in themselves to traffic on the quarter-deck; never attempting to over-reach them in exchanges, nor to commit a single theft.

They had hopes of weathering the island on the 22d, and should have succeeded if a calm had not ensued, and left them to the mercy of a swell, which impelled them towards the land, from which they were not above the distance of two leagues. Some light puffs of wind, however, took them out of danger. Whilst they lay in this situation, some islanders came off with hogs, fowls, and fruit. From one of the canoes they got a goose, which was not larger than a Muscovy duck. The colour of its plumage was dark grey, and the bill and legs were black. After purchasing what the natives had brought off, they made sail, and stretched to the north. At midnight they tacked, and stood to the south-east. Imagining the Discovery would see them tack, they omitted the signal; but it afterwards appeared that she did not, and continued standing to the north; for, the next morning at day-light she was not to be seen.

On the 30th they began to be in want, but a calm prevented them from approaching the shore. A breeze,

however, sprung up at midnight, which enabled them to stand in for the land at day-break; soon after the islanders visited them, bringing with them a quantity of fruit and roots, but only three small pigs.

Before day-break on the 1st of January, 1779, the atmosphere was laden with heavy clouds; and the new year was ushered in with a heavy rain. Being now about four or five miles from the shore, some canoes arrived with hogs, fruit, and roots. They traded with the people in the canoes till three in the afternoon; when, being pretty well supplied, they made sail, in order to proceed to the lee side of the island in search of the Discovery.

Early on the 5th they passed the south point of the island, on which a large village is situated, many of whose inhabitants thronged off to the ships with hogs and women. The latter could not possibly be prevented from coming on board; and they were less reserved than any women they had ever seen.

From the appearance of this part of the country, it seemed incapable of affording them any vegetables. Evident marks presented themselves of its having been laid waste by the explosion of a volcano; and, though they had not seen any thing of the kind, the devastation it had made in the neighbourhood was but too visible.

To their great satisfaction, the Discovery made its appearance between ten and eleven on the 6th, coming round the south point of the island; and she joined them about one. Captain Clerke then came on board the Resolution, and acquainted them, that, having cruised four or five days where they were separated, he plied

round the east side of the island; where, meeting with unfavourable winds, he had been driven to some distance from the coast. One of the islanders continued on board the whole time, at his own request, having refused to leave the ship though opportunities had presented themselves.

For about ten days they kept standing off and on, during which time they had several visits from the natives. On the 16th, at day-break, seeing the appearance of a bay, Captain Cook sent Mr. Bligh, with a boat from each ship, to survey it, being now about three leagues off. Canoes arrived from all quarters, insomuch that by ten o'clock in the morning there were at least a thousand about the ships, crowded with people, and laden with hogs and other provisions. One of them took a boat's rudder from the ship, and was not detected till it was too late to recover it. Captain Cook imagined this to be a proper opportunity to shew these islanders the use of fire-arms; two or three musquets, and as many four-pounders, were, by his orders, fired over the canoe which went away with the rudder; but as the shot was not intended to take effect, the surrounding multitude were more surprized than frightened.

In the evening Mr. Bligh returned, and reported that he had found a bay, with good anchorage, and fresh water in a desirable situation. Into this bay the captain determined to take his ships, in order to refit, and supply themselves with refreshments. At the approach of night, the most considerable part of their visitors retired to the shore; but many, at their own earnest request, were permitted to sleep on board. Curiosity, at least with some of them, was not the only motive, for several articles were missing the next morning;

in consequence of which, Captain Cook came to a resolution not to admit so many on any future night.

In the forenoon of the 17th they anchored in the bay, called by the natives Karakakooa. The ships continued to be much crouded with the natives, and were surrounded by a vast multitude of canoes. Besides those who visited them in canoes, all the shore was covered with spectators, and hundreds were swimming about the ships.

CHAP. V.

Description of Karakakooa Bay—Curious Ceremonies—Visits from Chiefs—Civility of the Natives—The Pinnace attacked and plundered—A Contest with the Natives—The consequences—Death of Captain Cook—Bravery of Mr. Phillips—Departure from the Bay—Various Adventures—Death of Captain Clerke—Return of the Vessels.

THE Bay of Karakakooa is situated in the district of Acona, on the west side of the island of Owhyhee. It extends about a mile in depth, and is bounded by two points of land, at the distance of half a league from each other. The north point is flat and barren, on which is situated the village of Kowrowa. A more considerable village, called Kakooa, stands in the bottom of the bay, near a grove of stately cocoa-trees. The situation appeared so desirable, that they moored at the north side of the bay, and within a quarter of a mile from the shore. As soon as the inhabitants perceived their intention to anchor in the bay, they came off in astonishing numbers, expressing their joy by singing, shouting, and the most extravagant gestures. One of the chiefs who visited the Resolution was named Pareea. Though a young man, he was a person of great authority. He told Captain Cook that he was Jackanee to the sovereign of the island, who was then on a military expedition at Mowee; whence he was expected to

return in a few days. Some presents from the captain attached him to his interests, and he found him exceedingly useful. There was another chief named Kaneena who had also attached himself particularly to Captain Cook. These two chiefs were exceedingly well proportioned, and had countenances remarkably pleasing. Kaneena's height was about six feet, his features were regular and expressive, his deportment was easy, firm, and graceful, and he had dark lively eyes.

The Resolution having got into her station, Pareea and Kaneena brought a third chief on board, whose name was Koah. He was represented as a priest, and one who, in his early days, had distinguished himself as a warrior. He was a little old emaciated figure, having sore red eyes, and his body covered with a leprous scurf, occasioned by the immoderate use of the ava. Being conducted to the cabin, he approached Captain Cook with the greatest deference, threw a piece of red cloth over his shoulders, and retreating a few paces, made an offering of a small pig, at the same time pronouncing a discourse of a considerable length. At the conclusion of this ceremony, Koah dined with the captain, and ate plentifully of the viands before him; but, like most of the islanders in these seas, he could hardly be induced to taste their wine or spirits a second time. In the evening Captain Cook, Mr. King, and Mr. Bailey, accompanied him on shore. As soon as they landed on the beach, they were preceded by four men, bearing each a wand tipt with dog's hair, and pronouncing with a loud voice a short sentence, in which the word Orono, (the name which the natives of Owhyhee generally gave Captain Cook) was very distinguishable. The croud which had assembled on the shore, retired

at their approach; and not an individual was to be seen, except a few who had prostrated themselves on the ground near the habitations of the adjacent village.

Before we relate an account of the peculiar ceremonies respecting the adoration paid to Captain Cook, it will be necessary to describe a Morai, situated on the beach at Kakooa. It consisted of a square solid pile of stones, of the length of forty yards, the breadth of twenty, and the height of fourteen. The top of it was flat, and a wooden rail surrounded it, on which were displayed the skulls of those natives who had been sacrificed on the death of their chiefs. A ruinous wooden building was situated in the centre of the area, connected with the rail by a stone wall, dividing the whole space into two parts. Five poles of about twenty feet in height, supported an irregular kind of scaffold, on the side next the country; and on the side towards the sea were two small houses, with a covered communication. Koah conducted them to the top of this pile. At their entrance they beheld two large wooden images with most distorted features, having a long piece of wood proceeding from the top of their heads, of a conical form inverted; the other parts were covered with red cloth. Here Captain Cook was received by a tall young man, having a long beard, who presented him to the images, and chanted a kind of hymn, in which he was assisted by Koah. They were then led to the side of the morai, where the poles were erected, at the foot of which twelve images were ranged in the form of a semicircle; the middle figure having a high table before it, on which they saw a putrid hog, and under it some cocoa-nuts, plantains, potatoes, bread-fruit, and pieces of sugar-

cane. The captain was conducted under this stand by Koah, who, taking down the hog, held it towards him; when, having again addressed him in a long and vehement speech, he suffered it to fall upon the ground, and ascended the scaffolding with him, though at the peril of their falling. They now beheld, advancing in solemn procession, and entering the top of the morai, ten men, bearing a live hog, and a large piece of red cloth of considerable dimensions. Advancing a few paces they stopped and prostrated themselves; and Kaireekeea, the tall young man already mentioned, approaching them, received the cloth, and carried it to Koah, who wrapped it round the captain, and made him an offering of the hog.

Captain Cook was now aloft, in a situation truly whimsical, swathed in red cloth, and hardly able to keep his hold on the rotten scaffolding. In this situation he was entertained with the chanting of Koah and Kaireekeea, sometimes in concert, and sometimes alternately. After this office was performed, which was of considerable duration, Koah let the hog drop, and he and the captain immediately descended. He then conducted him to the images just mentioned, to each of which he expressed himself in a sneering tone, snapping his fingers at them as he passed. He then presented him to that in the centre; which, from its being habited in red cloth, appeared to be in the highest estimation. He fell prostrate before this figure, and kissed it, requesting Captain Cook would do the same; which he readily submitted to, being determined to follow Koah's directions throughout the whole of this ceremony.

They were now conveyed into the other division of

the morai, where a space of about twelve feet square was sunk three feet below the level of the area. They descended into this, and the captain was immediately seated between the two idols; one of his arms being supported by Koah, and Mr. King was requested to support the other. A second procession of natives at this time arrived, with a baked hog, a pudding, some cocoa-nuts, bread-fruit, and other vegetables. As they drew near, Kaireekeea placed himself before them, and presented the hog to Captain Cook in the usual manner, chanting as before, and his companions making regular responses.

At the conclusion of this offering the natives seated themselves fronting them, and began to cut up the baked hog, to break the cocoa-nuts, and to peel the vegetables. Others were employed in brewing the ava, by chewing it in the same manner as at the Friendly Islands. Kaireekeea then chewed part of the kernel of a cocoa-nut, and wrapped it in a piece of cloth, with which he rubbed the captain's head, face, hands, arms, and shoulders. The ava was afterwards handed round, and when they had all tasted it, Koah and Pareea pulled the flesh of the hog in pieces, and proceeded to put some of it into their mouths. Mr. King had no particular objection to being fed by Pareea, who was remarkably cleanly in his person; but Captain Cook, to whom a piece was presented by Koah, could not swallow a morsel, the putrid hog being strong in his recollection; and as the old man, from motives of civility, had chewed it for him, his reluctance was much increased.

This ceremony being concluded, they quitted the morai, after distributing among the populace some pieces of iron, and other articles, with which they were much

delighted. They were then conducted in procession to the boats; the men with wands attending, and pronouncing sentences as before. Most of the natives again retired, and the remaining few prostrated themselves as they passed along the shore. Our navigators went immediately on board, full of the idea of what they had seen, and perfectly satisfied with the honest dispositions of their new friends.

Mr. King went on shore the next morning, with a guard of eight marines; having received orders to erect the observatory in a proper situation; by which means the waterers, and other working parties on shore, might be superintended and protected. Observing a convenient spot for this purpose, almost in the centre of the village, Pareea immediately offered to exercise his power in their behalf, and proposed that some houses should be taken down, that their observations might not be obstructed. This generous offer, however, they declined, and they made choice of a potatoe-field adjoining to the morai, which was granted them most readily; and, to prevent the intrusion of the natives, the place was consecrated by the priests, by placing their wands round the wall that enclosed it. No canoes now attempted to land near them; the natives only sat on the wall, not daring to come within the tabooed space without obtaining permission. The men, indeed, at their request, would bring provisions into the field; but their utmost endeavours were ineffectual to induce the women to approach them.

Pareea and Koah left them on the 19th of January, in order to attend Terreeoboo, who had landed on a distant part of the island; and nothing material happened on board till the 24th.

They had not long been settled in the observatory before they discovered the habitation of a society of priests, who had excited their curiosity by their regular attendance on the morai. Their huts were erected round a pond, inclosed within a grove of cocoa-trees, by which they were separated from the beach and the village, and gave the situation an air of religious retirement. Captain Cook being made acquainted with these circumstances, he was determined to visit them, and was received with the same ceremony as before.

While they continued in the bay, whenever the captain came on shore, he was preceded by one of these priests, who proclaimed the landing of the Orono, and ordered the inhabitants to prostrate themselves. He was chiefly attended by the same person on the water, where he was stationed in the bow of the boat, having a wand in his hand, to give notice of his approach to the natives who were in canoes; on which they instantly ceased paddling, and fell on their faces till he had passed. But their civilities extended beyond parade and ceremony; the party on shore were daily supplied by them with hogs and vegetables, sufficient for their subsistence and to spare; and canoes, laden with provisions, were as regularly sent off to the ships. Nothing was demanded in return, nor was the most distant hint ever given that any compensation was expected. Their manner of conferring favours appeared more like the discharge of a religious duty, than to result from mere liberality. They were informed that it was at the expence of Kaoo, the chief priest, and grandfather to Kareekeea, who was then in the suite of the sovereign of the island. The chiefs, indeed, who were always sufficiently attentive to their own interests, were always ge-

nerously rewarded for their presents; in consequence of which they were supplied with more hogs than they could consume.

On the 24th, however, they were not a little surprized to find that no canoes were permitted to put off, and that the natives confined themselves to their houses. At length, they were informed that the bay was tabooed, and that all intercourse with them was interdicted, on account of the arrival of Terreeoboo their king. Not apprehending an accident of this kind, the ships were deprived of their usual supply of vegetables. The next day they endeavoured, by threats and promises, to induce the inhabitants to approach them. At last, some of them were venturing to put off, and a chief was observed to be very active in driving them away. In order to make him desist, a musquet was instantly fired over his head, which operated as it was intended, and refreshments were soon after to be had as usual. In the afternoon, the ships were privately visited by Terreeoboo, attended only by one canoe, which had his wife and family on board. After staying till almost ten o'clock, he returned to the village of Kowrowa.

About noon the next day, the king, in a large canoe, with some attendants in two others, paddled from the village, in great state, towards the ships. Their appearance was noble and magnificent. Terreeoboo and his chiefs were in the first canoe, arrayed in feathered cloaks and helmets, and armed with spears and daggers. In the second came Kaoo, the chief priest, together with his brethren, having their idols displayed on red cloth. The third canoe was laden with hogs and vegetables. As they advanced, the priests, in the second

canoe, chanted their hymns with great solemnity. After paddling round the vessels, they did not come on board, as was expected, but made immediately towards the shore, at the beach where the vessels were stationed. When Mr. King beheld them approaching, he ordered a guard to receive the king; and Captain Cook, seeing that he intended to go on shore, went thither also, and landed almost at the same instant. Our navigators ushered them into the tent, and the king had hardly been seated when he rose up, and gracefully threw over the captain's shoulders the rich feathered cloak that he himself wore, placed a helmet on his head, and presented him with a curious fan. Five or six other cloaks, of great beauty and value, were also spread at the captain's feet. Four hogs were then brought forward by the king's attendants, together with bread-fruit, cocoa-nuts, and sugar-canes. Then followed the ceremony of Terreeoboo's changing names with Captain Cook. A solemn procession now advanced, consisting of priests, preceded by a venerable old personage, followed by a train of people leading large hogs; others being laden with potatoes, plantains, &c. By the countenance and gestures of Kaireekeea, it was evident that the old man who headed the procession was the chief priest on whose bounty they were told they had so long subsisted. He wrapped a piece of red cloth round the shoulders of Captain Cook, and, in the usual form, presented him with a pig. He was then seated next the king, and Kaireekeea and his attendants began their vocal ceremonies, Kaoo and the chiefs assisting in the responses.

The formalities of the meeting being ended, Captain Cook conducted Terreeoboo, and several of his chiefs,

on board the Resolution. They were received with every possible attention and respect; and the captain, as a compensation for the feathered cloak, put a linen shirt upon the sovereign, and girt his own hanger round him. Kaoo, and about half a dozen other ancient chiefs, remained on shore. At this time not a canoe was permitted to appear in the bay, and those natives who did not confine themselves to their huts, lay prostrate on the ground. Before the king quitted the Resolution, he granted leave for the natives to trade with the ships as usual; but the women were still interdicted.

The behaviour of the inhabitants was so civil and inoffensive, that all apprehensions of danger were totally vanished. The officers ventured frequently up the country, either singly or in small parties, and sometimes continued out the whole night. Variety of innocent arts were practised to attract their notice, or to delay their departure. The boys and girls ran through the villages before them, stopping them at every opening where there was a commodious place to form a group for dancing. But, notwithstanding their gentleness and hospitality, they were addicted to stealing, like all the other islanders of these seas. This was a distressing circumstance, and sometimes obliged them to exercise severity, which they would have been happy to have avoided, if it had not been essentially necessary.

On the 28th, Captain Clerke, who was generally confined on board by ill health, paid Terreeoboo his first visit at his habitation on shore. The ceremonies observed with Captain Cook, were performed in honour of Captain Clerke; and, on his return, he received a present of thirty large hogs, and such a quantity of vegetables as could not be consumed by his crew in less

than a week. This was the more extraordinary, as it was quite an unexpected visit.

Not having seen any of their sports, or exercises, the natives, at their particular request, entertained them in the evening with a boxing match. These games were inferior, in every respect, to those they had seen exhibited at the Friendly Islands.

William Whatman, a seaman of the gunner's crew, died this day. He was a man in years, and much respected for his attachment to Captain Cook. At the request of Terreeoboo, his remains were buried on the morai; the ceremony being performed with great solemnity. Kaoo and his brethren were present at the funeral, who behaved with great decorum, and paid due attention while the service was performing. On their beginning to fill up the grave, they approached it with great awe, and threw in a dead pig, together with some cocoa-nuts and plantains. For three successive nights they surrounded it, sacrificing hogs, and reciting hymns and prayers till the morning.

The ships being in great want of fuel, Captain Cook desired Mr. King to treat with the priests for the purchase of the rail on the morai. Mr. King had his doubts about the decency of this overture, and apprehended that the bare mention of it might be deemed impious: but in this he was exceedingly mistaken. They expressed no kind of surprize at the application, and the wood was delivered without the least stipulation.

The king, and his chiefs, had for some time been very importunate to know the time of their departure. Terreeoboo being accordingly informed that they intended to quit the island in two days, a kind of proclamation was immediately made, requiring the natives to bring

in their hogs and vegetables, for Terreeboo to present to the captain. They were afterwards entertained with dances, wrestling, and boxing-matches.

The 4th of February being fixed for their departure, Terreeboo invited Captain Cook and Mr. King to attend him, on the 3d, to Kaoo's residence. On their arrival there they saw large quantities of cloth lie scattered on the ground, abundance of red and yellow feathers, fastened to the fibres of cocoa-nut husks; and plenty of hatchets and iron ware, which had been received from them in barter. Not far from these was deposited an immense quantity of various kinds of vegetables, and at a little distance a large herd of hogs. They supposed, at first, that the whole was intended as a present for them; but they were informed, by Kaireekeea, that it was a tribute to the king, from the inhabitants of that district. And they were no sooner seated, than the bundles were brought, and laid severally at Terreeboo's feet; and the cloth, feathers, and iron, were displayed before him. The king selected about a third of the iron utensils, a third of the feathers, and some pieces of cloth; he ordered these to be set aside by themselves; and the remainder of the cloth, hogs, vegetables, &c. were afterwards presented to Captain Cook and Mr. King. The value and magnitude of this present far exceeded any thing they had met with. They now left the morai, and got the observatories on board. The taboo was removed, and with it its magical effects. As soon as they had quitted the place, the people rushed in, and vigilantly searched, hoping to find some valuable articles left behind. Mr. King experienced great kindness and civility from the inhabitants in general, but the friendship shewn by the

priests was constant and unbounded. This gentleman was anxious to conciliate their esteem; in which he so happily succeeded, that, when they were acquainted with the time of the captain's departure, he was urged to remain behind, and received overtures of the most flattering kind. When he endeavoured to excuse himself, by alledging, that Captain Cook would not permit it; they proposed to conduct him to the mountains, and there conceal him till the departure of the ships. On King's assuring them, that the captain would not sail without him, the king and Kaoo repaired to Captain Cook (whom they supposed to be his father), formally requesting that he might be suffered to remain behind. The captain, unwilling to give a positive refusal, to a proposal so generously intended, assured them that he could not then part with him; but he should return thither the next year, when he would endeavour to oblige them.

Early on the 4th, they unmoored, and the Resolution and Discovery sailed out of the bay, attended by a vast number of canoes. It was Captain Cook's intention to finish the survey of Owhyhee, before he went to the other islands, hoping to meet with a road more sheltered than Karakakooa Bay.

On the 5th, and the following day, they had calm weather, and consequently their progress was but slow.

Early on the 6th, they were abreast of a deep bay, which the natives call Toe yah-yah. They flattered themselves with hopes of finding a commodious harbour in this bay, as they saw some fine streams of water to the north-east; and the whole appeared to be well sheltered. Mr. Bligh, however, reported, that it would not by any means answer their purpose.

A gale of wind coming on at midnight, on the 7th, they were obliged to double-reef the top-sails. The next morning, at day-break, they found that the foremast had given way. Captain Cook, after some hesitation, now determined to return to Karakakooa Bay. Early on the 10th, in a heavy squall, they found themselves close in with the breakers, to the northward of the west point of Owhyhee. They had just room to avoid them, and fired several guns to alarm the Discovery, and apprize her of the danger.

The weather in the forenoon was more moderate, and a few canoes ventured to come off to them, when those on board them said that much mischief had been occasioned by the late storms, and that a great many canoes had been lost. They kept beating to windward the remainder of the day, and in the evening were within a mile of the bay; but they stood off and on till day-light the next morning, when they anchored in their old station.

The whole of the 11th, and part of the 12th, they were engaged in getting out the foremast, and conveying it on shore. Not only the head of the mast had sustained damage, but the heel was become exceedingly rotten, having a very large hole in the middle of it. Several days being probably required to make the necessary repairs, Messrs. King and Baily got the observatory on shore, and pitched their tents on the morai, guarded by a corporal and six marines. A friendly intercourse was renewed with the priests, who, for the greater security of the workmen, tabooed the place with their wands as before.

The reception of our navigators, on coming to anchor, was so different from what it had been upon their

first arrival, that they were all astonished: no shouts, bustle, or confusion, but a solitary deserted bay, with hardly a canoe stirring. Their curiosity, indeed, might be supposed to be diminished by this time; but the hospitable treatment they had continually been favoured with, and the friendly footing on which they departed, induced them to expect, that, on their return, they would have received them with the greatest demonstrations of joy. The whole mystery was, however, unravelled by the return of a boat, which they had sent on shore, bringing intelligence that Terreeoboo was absent, and that the bay was tabooed. This account appeared very satisfactory to many of them; but others were of opinion that there was, at this time, something very suspicious in the behaviour of the natives, and that the taboo, or interdiction, on pretence of Terreeoboo's absence, was artfully contrived, to give him time to consult his chiefs in what manner they should be treated. Whether these conjectures were erroneous, or true, it is certain that things were conducted in their usual quiet course till the 13th, in the afternoon; when the commander of the Discovery's watering party came to inform Mr. King that several chiefs were assembling near the beach, and were driving away the natives, who assisted the sailors in rolling the casks to the shore; at the same time declaring, that their behaviour seemed exceedingly suspicious, and that he imagined they would give him some farther disturbance. Mr. King sent a marine with him, agreeably to his request, but permitted him to take only his side-arms. The officer, in a short time returned, and informed Mr. King that the inhabitants had armed themselves with stones, and were become tumultuous. He therefore went himself to the

spot, attended by a marine, with his musket. At their approach the islanders threw away their stones, and, on Mr. King's application to some of the chiefs, the mob was dispersed. Every thing being now quiet, Mr. King went to meet Captain Cook, who was then coming on shore with the pinnace. He related to him what had recently happened, and received orders to fire a ball at the offenders, if they again behaved insolently, and began to throw stones. In consequence of these directions, Mr. King gave orders to the corporal that the sentinels should be loaded with ball, instead of shot.

On their return to the tents they heard a continued fire of muskets from the Discovery, which they perceived to be directed at a canoe, which was hastening towards the shore, with one of their small boats in pursuit of it. This firing, they concluded, was the consequence of some theft, and Captain Cook ordered Mr. King to follow him with a marine armed, and to endeavour to seize the people as they landed. They accordingly ran to the place, where the canoe was expected to come ashore, but did not arrive in time; the people having quitted it, and fled into the country before their arrival: however, the goods which had been stolen were restored.

A difference of a more serious nature had happened during their absence. The officer, who had been dispatched in the small boat after the thieves, and who was returning on board, with the booty that had been restored, seeing Captain Cook and Mr. King engaged in the pursuit of the offenders, seized a canoe which was drawn upon the shore. This canoe unfortunately belonged to Pareea, who, at that instant arriving from on board the Discovery, claimed his property, and pro-

tested his innocence. The officer persisted in detaining it, in which he was encouraged by the crew of the pinnace, then waiting for Captain Cook; in consequence of which a scuffle ensued, and Parea was knocked down by a violent blow on the head with an oar. Several of the natives, who had hitherto been peaceable spectators, began now to attack the English with such a shower of stones, that they were forced to a precipitate retreat, and swam off to a rock, at a considerable distance from the shore. The pinnace was plundered immediately by the natives, and would have been entirely demolished, if Pareea had not interposed; who had not only recovered from his blow, but had also forgot it at the same instant. He ordered the croud to disperse, and beckoned to the English to come and take possession of the pinnace, and afterwards assured them that he would use his influence to get the things restored, which had been taken out of it. After their departure, he followed them in his canoe, carrying them a midshipman's cap, and some other articles of the plunder; and, expressing much concern at what had happened, he begged to know if the orono would kill him, and whether he might be permitted to come on board the next day? He was assured that he would be well received, and therefore joined noses with the officers (their usual token of friendship) and paddled over to Kowrowa.

When these particulars were told Captain Cook, he was exceedingly concerned; and, when he and Mr. King were returning on board, he expressed his fears that these islanders would oblige him to pursue violent measures; adding, "they must not be permitted to suppose that they have gained any advantage over us." It was then, however, too late to take any steps that

evening; he therefore gave orders that every islander should be immediately turned out of the ship.

At day-light the next morning Mr. King went on board the Resolution, in order to get the time-keeper; and in his way thither was hailed by the Discovery, and received information that their cutter had some time in the night been stolen, from the buoy, where it had been moored. On Mr. King's arrival on board, he found the marines were arming themselves, and Captain Cook busied in loading his double-barrelled gun. It was his usual practice, in all the Islands of this ocean, when any thing of consequence had been stolen from him, by some stratagem to get the king, or some of the principal erees, on board, where he detained them as hostages till the property was restored. This method having hitherto proved successful, he meant to adopt it on the present occasion; and gave orders to stop every canoe that should attempt to leave the bay, resolving to seize and destroy them, if the cutter could not be recovered by peaceable means.

Between seven and eight o'clock Captain Cook and Mr. King quitted the ship together; the former in the pinnace, with Mr. Phillips and nine marines; and the latter in the small boat. The last orders Mr. King received from Captain Cook were, to quiet the minds of the people on their side of the bay, by the strongest assurances that they should not be injured; to keep his people together, and to be continually on his guard. Captain Cook and Mr. King then separated; the captain going towards Kowrowa, where Terreeoboo resided; and Mr. King proceeded to the beach: his first business, when he arrived on shore, was to issue strict orders to the marines to continue within the tent, to

charge their muskets with ball, and not on any consideration to quit their arms. He then attended old Kaoo and the priests at their respective huts, and explained to them, as well as he was able, the reason of the hostile preparations, which had so exceedingly alarmed them. He found that they were no strangers to the circumstance of the cutter's being stolen, and assured them, that though the captain was not only resolved to recover it, but also to punish in the most exemplary manner the authors of the theft, yet that they, and all the inhabitants of the village on their side, had not the least occasion to be alarmed, or to apprehend the least danger. Kaoo interrogated Mr. King, with great emotion, if any harm was to happen to Terreeoboo? He assured him there was not; and both he and his brethren appeared much satisfied with this assurance.

Captain Cook having, in the mean time, called off the launch from the north point of the bay, and taken it with him, landed at Kowrowa, with the lieutenant and nine marines. He proceeded immediately into the village, where he was respectfully received; the people, as usual, prostrating themselves before him, and making their accustomed offerings of small hogs. Perceiving that his design was not suspected, his next step was to inquire for the king and the two boys, his sons, who had been almost continually his guests on board the Resolution. The boys presently returned with the natives, who had been searching for them, and immediately conducted Captain Cook to the habitation where Terreeoboo had slept. The old man had just awoke; and, after some conversation respecting the loss of the cutter, from which the captain was convinced that he was not in any wise privy to it, he invited him to accompany him, and

spend the day on board the Resolution. The king accepted the invitation, and rose immediately to accompany him. Every thing had now a prosperous appearance; the two boys were already in the pinnace, and the rest of the party approaching the water-side, when a woman, named Kanee-kabareea, the mother of the boys, and one of Terreeoboo's favourite wives, followed him, beseeching him, with tears and entreaties not to venture to go on board. Two chiefs, who came with her, took hold of him, and insisting he should proceed no farther, obliged him to sit down. The islanders now collecting in vast numbers along the shore, who had probably been alarmed by the discharging of the great guns, and the hostile appearances in the bay, gathered together round Captain Cook and Terreeoboo. Thus situated, the lieutenant of marines, perceiving that his men were huddled together in the croud, and consequently unable to use their arms, if there should appear to be a necessity for it, proposed to Captain Cook, to draw them up along the rocks, close to the edge of the water. The populace making way for them to pass, the lieutenant drew them up in a line; within about thirty yards of the place where Terreeoboo was sitting. The old king continued all this time on the ground, bearing the most visible marks of terror and dejection in his countenance. Captain Cook, unwilling to abandon the object which occasioned him to come on shore, urged him most earnestly to proceed: whilst, on the other hand, if the king expressed any inclination to follow him, the chiefs who surrounded him, interposed; at first they had recourse to prayers and entreaties, but afterwards to force and violence, and even insisted on his remaining on shore. Captain Cook at length per-

ceiving that the alarm had spread too generally, and that there was not a probability of getting him off without much bloodshed, gave up the point, at the same time observing to Mr. Phillips, that to compel him to go on board would probably occasion the loss of many of the lives of the inhabitants.

Notwithstanding this enterprize had now failed, and was abandoned by Captain Cook, yet it did not appear that his person was in the least degree of danger, till an accident happened, which occasioned a fatal turn to the affair. The boats stationed across the bay having fired at some canoes, for attempting to get out, unfortunately had killed one of their principal chiefs. Intelligence of his death arrived at the village where Captain Cook then was, just as he had parted from the king, and was proceeding with great deliberation towards the shore. The ferment it immediately occasioned was but too conspicuous; the women and children were instantly sent away, and the men were soon clad in their war-mats, and armed with spears and stones. One of the natives having provided himself with a stone, and a long iron spike (called by the natives a pahooa) advanced towards the captain, flourishing his weapon in defiance, and threatening to throw the stone. The captain requested him to desist; the islander repeating his menace, he was highly provoked, and fired a load of small shot at him. The man was shielded in his war-mat, which the shot could not penetrate; his firing, therefore, served only to irritate and encourage them. Vollies of stones were thrown at the marines; and one of the erees attempted the life of Mr. Phillips, with his pahooa; but, not succeeding in the attempt, he received from him a blow with the butt end of his piece. Captain Cook immedi-

ately discharged his second barrel, loaded with ball, and killed one of the most violent of the assailants. A general attack with stones succeeded, which was followed by a discharge of musquetry, not only from the marines, but also from the people in the boats. The natives, to their great astonishment, received their fire with great firmness, and, without giving time for the marines to charge again, they rushed in upon them with dreadful shouts and yells. Four of the marines retreated among the rocks, and fell a sacrifice to the fury of the enemy; three others were dangerously wounded, and the lieutenant stabbed between the shoulders with a pahooa; but having fortunately reserved his fire, he shot the man from whom he had received the wound, at the instant he was preparing to repeat his blow. The last time Captain Cook was distinctly seen, he was standing at the water's edge, and ordering the boats to cease firing, and pull in. It was imagined, by some of those who were present, that the marines, and those who were in the boats, fired without Captain Cook's orders, and that he was anxious to prevent the farther effusion of blood; it is therefore probable, that, on this occasion, his humanity proved fatal to him: for it was observed, that while he faced the natives no violence had been offered him, but when he turned about to give directions to the boats, he was stabbed in the back, and fell with his face into the water. A general shout was set up by the islanders on seeing him fall, and his body was dragged inhumanly on shore, where he was surrounded by the enemy, who snatching the dagger from each other's hands, displayed a savage eagerness to join in his destruction.

Such was the fate of this most excellent commander!

After a life, distinguished by such successful enterprize, his death can hardly be reckoned premature; since he lived to accomplish the great work for which he seemed particularly designed; being rather removed from the enjoyment, than the acquisition of glory. How sincerely his loss was lamented, by those who owed their security to his skill and conduct, and every consolation to his tenderness and humanity, it is impossible to describe: and the task would be equally difficult to represent the horror, dejection, and dismay, which followed so dreadful and unexpected a catastrophe.

It has been observed, that four of the marines, who accompanied Captain Cook, were killed by the natives on the spot. The others, with their lieutenant, Mr. Phillips, threw themselves into the sea, and made their escape, being protected by a smart fire from the boats. On this occasion, a striking instance of gallant behaviour, and of affection for his men, was displayed by Mr. Phillips; for he had scarcely got into the boat, when seeing one of the marines, who was not a very expert swimmer, struggling in the water, and in danger of being taken by the islanders, he instantly leaped into the sea to his asssistance, though considerably wounded himself; and, after receiving a blow on his head from a stone, which had almost sent him to the bottom, he caught the marine by the hair, and brought him off in safety.

When the general consternation, which the news of this misfortune had diffused throughout the whole company of both ships, had in some degree subsided, their attention was called to the party at the morai, where the masts and sails were on shore, guarded by only six marines. It is difficult to describe the emotions that

agitated the minds of Mr. King and his attendants, at this station, during the time in which these occurrences had happened, at the other side of the bay. Being at the distance of only a mile from the village of Kowrowa, they could distinctly perceive a vast multitude of people collected on the spot where Captain Cook had just before landed. They heard the firing of the muskets, and observed an uncommon bustle and agitation among the crowd. They afterwards saw the islanders retreating, the boats retiring from the shore, and passing and repassing, with great stillness, between the ships. Mr. King's heart soon misgave him on this occasion. Where so valuable a life was concerned, he could not avoid being alarmed by such new and threatening appearances. His first care, on hearing the report of the muskets, was to assure the islanders, (considerable numbers of whom were assembled round the wall of their consecrated field, and seemed at a loss how to account for what they had heard and seen,) that they should meet with no molestation; and that, at all events, he was inclined to continue on peaceable terms with them. They remained in this situation till the boats had returned on board, when Captain Clerke perceiving, by means of his telescope, that they were surrounded by the natives, who, he thought, designed to attack them, ordered two four-pounders to be fired at the islanders. These guns, though well aimed, did no mischief; but they gave the natives a convincing proof of their powerful effects. A cocoa-nut tree, under which some of them were sitting, was broken in the middle by one of the balls; and the other shivered a rock, which stood in an exact line with them. As Mr. King had, just before, given them the strongest assurances of their safety,

he was extremely mortified at this act of hostility, and, to prevent its being repeated, instantly dispatched a boat to inform Captain Clerke that he was, at present, on the most amicable terms with the islanders, and that, if any future occasion should arise for changing his conduct towards them, he would hoist a jack, as a signal for Captain Clerke to afford him his assistance.

Mr. King waited the return of the boat with the greatest impatience; and after remaining for the space of a quarter of an hour under the utmost anxiety and suspence, his fears were at length confirmed by the arrival of Mr. Bligh, with orders to strike the tents immediately, and to send on board the sails that were repairing. At the same instant, Kaireekeea having also received information of the death of Captain Cook, from a native who had arrived from the other side of the bay, approached Mr. King with great dejection and sorrow in his countenance, inquiring whether it was true. Mr. King thought proper to dissemble his belief of the death of Captain Cook, and to desire Kaireekeea to discourage the report; apprehending that the successful example of their countrymen might perhaps lead them to seize the favourable opportunity (which at this time presented itself,) of giving a second blow.

Mr. King having stationed the marines on the top of the morai, which formed a strong and advantageous post, intrusted the command to Mr. Bligh, who received the most positive directions to act solely on the defensive, and went on board the Discovery, in order to confer with Captain Clerke on the dangerous situation of their affairs. He had no sooner left the spot than the islanders began to annoy the men with stones; and just after he had reached the ship, he heard the firing of the ma-

rines. He therefore hastily returned on shore, where he found affairs growing every moment more alarming. The natives were providing arms, and putting on their mats; and their numbers augmented very fast. He also observed several large bodies advancing towards the marines, along the cliff, by which the village of Kakooa is separated from the north side of the bay, where Kowrowa is situate. They at first attacked them with stones, from behind the walls of their inclosures, and meeting with no resistance, soon became more daring. A few courageous fellows having crept along the beach, under cover of the rocks, suddenly presented themselves at the foot of the morai, with an intention of storming it on the side next the sea, which was its only accessible part; and they were not dislodged before they had stood a considerable quantity of shot, and had seen one of their number fall.

A strong reinforcement from both ships having landed about this time, the natives retreated behind their walls: which, affording Mr. King access to the priests, he sent one of them to exert his endeavours to bring his countrymen to some terms, and to propose to them, that if they would desist from throwing stones, he would not allow the marines to fire. This truce was agreed to, and the men were suffered to launch the mast, and carry off the sails, astronomical instruments, &c. without molestation. As soon as they had quitted the morai, the islanders took possession of it, and some of them threw a few stones, which, however, did no mischief.

Between eleven and twelve o'clock Mr. King arrived on board the Discovery, where he found that no decisive plan had been adopted for the regulation of their

nately happened that neither of them was hurt, notwithstanding the balls of both pieces had gone through the canoe. One of them was the person who constantly attended upon Captain Cook with the particular ceremonies before described. After bewailing with many tears the loss of the Orono, he informed them that he had brought a part of his body. He then gave them a a small bundle which he brought under his arm; and it is impossible to describe the horror with which they were seized, upon finding in it a piece of human flesh of the weight of about nine or ten pounds. This, he said, was all that now remained of the body; that the rest had been cut in pieces and burnt; but that the head and all the bones, except those which belonged to the trunk, were in the possession of Terreeoboo and the other chiefs; that what they saw had been allotted to Kaoo, the chief of the priests, for the purpose of being used in some religious ceremony; and that he had sent it as a testimony of his innocence, and of his attachment to them. They further told them that the chiefs were eager to take revenge on them for the death of their countrymen; and particularly cautioned them against trusting Koah, who, they declared, was their implacable enemy, and ardently longed for an opportunity of fighting them.

These two natives left them about eleven o'clock, and took the precaution to desire that one of their guard-boats might attend them till they had passed the Discovery, lest they should again be fired upon, which, by alarming their countrymen on shore, might expose them to the danger of detection. This request was readily complied with, and they had the satisfaction

to find that they reached the land safe and undiscovered.

They heard, during the remainder of this night, loud howling and lamentations. Early the following morning they received a visit from Koah. Mr. King was piqued at finding, that, notwithstanding the most glaring marks of treachery in his conduct, and the positive declaration of their friends the priests, he should still be suffered to carry on the same farce, and to make them at least appear the dupes of his hypocrisy.

It was now become absolutely necessary to attempt landing, in order to complete their stock of water. The natives continued to blow their conchs, and used every method of defiance. One of them had the insolence to come within musquet-shot, ahead of the Resolution, and, after throwing several stones at them, waved over his head the hat which had belonged to Captain Cook, while his countrymen ashore were exulting and encouraging his audacity. The sailors, highly enraged at this insult, begged they might no longer be obliged to put up with such reiterated provocations, and requested Mr. King to endeavour to obtain permission for them from Captain Clerke to take advantage of the first fair occasion of avenging the death of their much-lamented commander. On Mr. King's acquainting the captain with what was passing, he ordered some great guns to be fired at the islanders on shore; and promised the crew that, if they should be molested at the watering-place, the next day, they should then be permitted to chastise them. Though obliged to fire in some degree at random, their shot produced all the effect they could desire. They learned that some of the natives had lost

their lives, and among the rest Maiha-maiha, a principal Eree, nearly related to the king.

On the 17th the boats of both ships were dispatched ashore to procure water; and the Discovery was warped close to the beach, in order to protect the persons employed in that service. The men were so occupied in attending to their own safety, that, during the whole forenoon, they filled only one ton of water. It being, therefore, impossible for them to perform this service till their assailants were driven to a greater distance, the Discovery was ordered to dislodge the enemy with her great guns; which being accomplished by means of a few discharges, the men landed without molestation. The natives, however, made their appearance again soon afterwards, in their usual method of attack; and it was now deemed absolutely necessary to burn down some straggling huts near the wall behind which they had sheltered themselves. In executing the orders that were given for that purpose, the men were hurried into acts of unnecessary devastation and cruelty. Instead of burning only a few straggling houses, Captain Clerke was greatly surprized on perceiving the whole village in flames; and before a boat that was sent to stop the progress of the mischief could reach the land, the habitations of their old and constant friends the priests, were all on fire. In escaping from the flames, several of the inhabitants were shot.

The islanders being at length convinced that it was not the want of ability to chastise them which had induced our navigators at first to tolerate their provocations, desisted from molesting them; and, towards the evening, a chief named Eappo, a man of the first distinction, came with presents from Tereeoboo to sue for

peace. These presents were accepted, and the chief was dismissed with the following answer: That no peace would be granted till the remains of Captain Cook should be restored. They were informed by Eappo that the flesh of all the bones of their people who had been slain, as well as the bones of the trunks, had been burnt; that the limb-bones of the marines had been distributed among the inferior chiefs; and that the remains of Captain Cook had been disposed of as follows: the head to a great Eree called Kahoopeou; the hair to Maiha-maiha; and the arms, legs, and thighs, to Terreeoboo. After it was dark, many of the natives came off with various sorts of vegetables; and they also received from Kaireekeea two large presents of the same articles. The next day was principally employed in sending and receiving the messages that passed between Captain Clerke and the old king.

On the 20th they saw a numerous body of the natives descending the hill which is over the beach, in a sort of procession, each man carrying on his shoulders two or three sugar-canes, and some bread-fruit, plantains, and taro, in his hand. They were preceded by two drummers, who, when they reached the water-side, seated themselves by a white flag, and began beating their drums, while those who had followed them, advanced, one by one, and deposited the presents they had brought with them; after which they retired in the same order. Soon afterwards Eappo appeared in his long-feathered cloak, bearing something with great solemnity in his hands; and having stationed himself on a rock, he made signs that a boat should be sent him. Captain Clerke, supposing that the chief had brought the bones of Captain Cook, (which, indeed, proved to be the case,)

went himself in the pinnace to receive them, and ordered Mr. King to attend him in the cutter. When they arrived at the beach, Eappo, entering the pinnace, delivered the bones to Captain Clerke, wrapped up in a great quantity of fine new cloth, and covered with a spotted cloak of black and white feathers. He afterwards attended the gentlemen to the Resolution, but could not be prevailed on to accompany them on board, being, perhaps, from a sense of decency, unwilling to be present at the opening of the parcel. They found in this bundle both the hands of Captain Cook entire, which were well known, from a scar on one of them, that divided the fore finger from the thumb the whole length of the metacarpal bone; the skull, but with the scalp separated from it, and the bones of the face wanting; the scalp, with the ears adhering to it, and the hair upon it cut short; the bones of both the arms, with the skin of the fore-arms hanging to them; the bones of the thighs and legs joined together, but without the feet. The ligaments of the joints were observed to be entire, and the whole shewed sufficient marks of having been in the fire, except the hands, which had the flesh remaining upon them, and were cut in several places, and crammed with salt, most probably with a view of preserving them. The skull was free from any fracture, but the scalp had a cut in the back part of it. The lower jaw and feet, which were wanting, had been seized, as Eappo said, by different Erees. The remaining bones, however, were brought the next day; likewise the barrels of Captain Cook's gun, his shoes, and some other trifles which had belonged to him.

Nothing now remained but to perform the last solemn offices to their excellent commander. Eappo was dis-

missed with orders to taboo all the bay; and, in the afternoon, the bones having been deposited in a coffin, the funeral service was read over them, and they were committed to the deep with the usual military honours.

As they were now prepared for putting to sea, in the evening they dismissed all the natives; Eappo, and the friendly Kaireekeea, took their leave in a very affectionate manner. They immediately weighed anchor, and stood out of Karakakooa bay. The islanders were assembled in great numbers on the shore; and, as they passed along, received their last farewels with every mark of good will and affection.

On the 27th they reached Woohoo, but as it would have been laborious business to have watered at this place, Captain Clerke resolved to proceed immediately to Atooi. Accordingly, the next day they bore away for that island, and were in sight of it at noon. Having anchored in their old station, several canoes came to visit them, but it was very observable that there was not that appearance of cordiality in their manner, and complacency in their countenances, as when they saw them before.

The principal object in view at this place was to water the ships with as much expedition as possible; and Mr. King was sent on shore in the afternoon, with the launch and pinnace laden with empty casks. He was accompanied by the gunner of the Resolution, who was instructed to trade for some provisions; and they were attended by a guard of five marines. Multitudes of people were collected upon the beach, by whom, at first, they were kindly received; but, after they had landed the casks, they began to be exceedingly troublesome. No sooner had they posted marines to keep off

the populace, than a man took hold of the bayonet belonging to one of the soldier's musquets, and endeavoured to wrench it forcibly from his hand. Mr. King immediately advanced towards them, when the native quitted his hold and retired; but immediately returned, having a spear in one hand, and a dagger in the other; and it was with difficulty that his countrymen could restrain him from engaging with the soldier. This affray was occasioned by the native's having received from the soldier a slight prick with his bayonet, to induce him to keep without the line. Their situation at this time required great management and circumspection; Mr. King accordingly enjoined that no one should presume to fire, or proceed to any other act of violence, without positive commands. Having given these instructions, he was summoned to the assistance of the watering party, where he found the natives in the same mischievous disposition. They had peremptorily demanded for every cask of water a large hatchet; which not being complied with, they would not permit the sailors to roll them to the boats. As soon as Mr. King had joined them, one of the natives approached him with great insolence, and made the same demand. Mr. King told him, that, as a friend, he was welcome to a hatchet, but he certainly would carry off the water without paying for it; and instantly ordered the pinnace-men to proceed; at the same time calling for three marines from the trading party to protect them. This becoming spirit so far succeeded as to prevent any daring attempt to interrupt them, but they still persevered in the most teasing and insulting behaviour. Though they, in general, preserved a kind of deference and respect for Mr. King, yet they obliged him to contribute his share towards their

stock of plunder. One of them approached him in a familiar manner, and diverted his attention, whilst another seized his hanger, which he held carelessly in his hand, and ran away with it.

Every thing, at length, was got into the boats, and only Mr. King, Mr. Anderson, the gunner, and a seaman of the boat's crew, remained on shore. The pinnace lying beyond the surf, which they were under a necessity of swimming through, Mr. King ordered the other two to make the best of their way to it, and told them he would follow them. However, they both refused to comply with this order, and it became a matter of contest who should be the last on shore. Some hasty expression, it seems, Mr. King had just before made use of to the sailor, which he considered as a reflection on his courage, excited his resentment; and the old gunner, as a point of honour was now started, conceived it to be his duty to take a part in it. In this whimsical situation they, perhaps, might have long remained, had not the dispute been settled by the stones, which began to fly plentifully about them, and by the exclamations of the people from the boats, begging them to be expeditious, as the natives were armed with clubs and spears, and pursuing them into the water. Mr. King arrived first at the pinnace, and perceiving Mr. Anderson was so far behind as not to be entirely out of danger, he ordered one musquet to be fired; but, in the hurry of executing his orders, the marines fired two. The natives immediately ran away, leaving only one man and woman on the beach. The man attempted to rise several times, but was not able, having been wounded in the groin.

On the 2d of March Mr. King was again ordered on

shore with the watering party. As they had so narrowly escaped the preceding day, Captain Clerke augmented their force from both ships. This precaution, however, was found to be unnecessary; for the beach was left entirely to themselves, and the ground, extending from the landing-place to the lake, tabooed. They completed their watering the next day; and, on returning to the ships, were informed that several chiefs had been on board, and had apologized for the conduct of their countrymen.

On the 8th they weighed, and on the 12th, having found a fine bay, anchored in eighteen fathoms water. A small village was situated on the north side of the bay, to the eastward of which were four wells of good water.

The continuation of the light winds, with the very unsettled state of the weather, and the little expectation they had of any change for the better, induced Captain Clerke to give up his plan of keeping within the tropical latitudes. In consequence of which, they began, on March the 29th, to steer N. W. by N. The light winds almost constantly prevailed, after their departure from the Sandwich Islands; during which time the air was hot and sultry; they lost the trade-wind on April the 6th. After encountering very boisterous and foggy weather, they had, on the 25th, an imperfect glance of the entrance of Awatska Bay, but could not presume to venture into it in the present situation of the weather. The mouth of Awatska Bay opens in the direction of N. N. W. On the S. side the land is moderately high: it rises to the northward in a bluff head. Three remarkable rocks lie in the channel between them, not far from the north-east side; and, on the opposite

side, a single rock of a considerable size. There is a look-out house on the north-head, which is used as a light-house when any of the Russian ships are expected upon the coast. It had a flag-staff in it; but there did not appear to be any person there.

Passing the mouth of the bay, which extends about four miles in length, a circular bason presents itself, of about four miles in circumference; in which, on the 28th, they anchored in six fathoms water. Plenty of wild-fowl of various kinds were seen; also large flights of Greenland pigeons; together with ravens and eagles. They looked at every corner of the bay, to see if they could discern the town of St. Peter and St. Paul. At last they perceived to the N. E. some miserable log-houses, and a few conical huts, amounting in the whole to about thirty.

Early on the 29th Mr. King was sent with the boats to examine the bay, and to present the letters to the Russian commander which they had brought from Oonalashka. They proceeded towards a village they had lately seen, and, having advanced as far as they could with the boats, they got upon the ice, which reached about half a mile from the shore. When farther advanced on the ice, a few men were seen hurrying backwards and forwards; and afterwards, a sledge, with one person in it, and drawn by dogs, approached them. Struck with this unusual sight, and admiring the civility of this stranger, who, they supposed, was coming to their assistance, they were astonished to see him turn short round, and direct his course another way. They were equally chagrined and disappointed at this abrupt departure; especially as their journey over the ice began to be both difficult and dangerous. The sight of another sledge,

however, afforded them some comfort. But, instead of coming to relieve them, the driver stopped short and called out to them. Mr. King immediately held up Ismyloff's letters; in consequence of which, he turned about and went full speed back again, followed with the execrations of some of the gentlemen. Unable to draw any conclusion from this unaccountable behaviour, they still proceeded towards the ostrog with the greatest circumspection; and, when at the distance of about a quarter of a mile from it, they observed a body of armed men advancing towards them. To avoid giving them any alarm, and to preserve the most peaceable appearance, Mr. King and Mr. Webber marched in front, and the men, who had boat-hooks in their hands, were ordered in the rear. The armed party consisted of about thirty soldiers, preceded by a person with a cane in his hand. Within a few paces of them he halted, and drew up his men in a martial order. Mr. King presented Ismyloff's letters to him, and vainly endeavoured to make him understand that they were English, and had brought these dispatches from Oonalashka. Having attentively examined them, he conducted them towards the village in solemn silence, frequently halting his men, and making them perform different parts of their manual exercise. Arriving, at length, at the habitation of the commanding officer of the party, they were ushered in; and after giving orders to the military without doors, their host appeared, accompanied by the secretary of the port. One of the letters from Ismyloff was now opened, and the other sent express to Bolcheretsk, a town on the west side of Kamtschatka, and the place of residence of the Russian commander of this province.

It appears extraordinary that the natives had not seen the Resolution the preceding day, when they anchored in the bay; nor this morning till their boats approached the ice. The first sight of the ship had struck them with a considerable panic. The garrison was instantly put under arms; two field-pieces were placed before the commander's house; and powder, shot, and lighted matches, were all in readiness.

The officer who had conducted them to his house was a serjeant; and also the commander of the ostrog. His house was intolerably hot, but remarkably neat and clean. After Mr. King had changed his clothes, by putting on a complete suit of the serjeant's, at his earnest desire, they were requested to partake of a dinner, which was undoubtedly the best he could procure; and, considering their visit was unexpected, was ingeniously conducted. They had some cold beef sliced, with boiling water poured over it. After that they were regaled with a large roasted bird, the taste of which was most delicious, though they were unacquainted with its species. Having eaten a part of this, it was removed, and fish were served up, dressed in two different methods. Soon after which, the bird appeared again in savoury and sweet pates. Their liquor was such as the Russians distinguish by the name of quass, and was the most indifferent part of their entertainment.

After waiting with extreme impatience for an answer to their letters, on the 4th of May several sledges arrived at the edge of the ice, and a boat was sent from the ship to conduct those who were in them on board. One of them proved to be a Russian merchant from Bolcheretsk, whose name was Fedositsch; and the other a German named Port, with dispatches from Major Behm,

commander of Kamtschatka, to Captain Clerke. Arriving at the edge of the ice, and seeing distinctly the magnitude of the ships, which were then within two hundred yards of them, they were exceedingly alarmed; and before they ventured to embark, stipulated that two of the boat's crew should remain on shore as hostages for their safety. Mr. Webber, who spoke the German language fluently, convinced them, though not without difficulty, that they were Englishmen and friends. Mr. Port was introduced to Captain Clerke, to whom he delivered the commander's letter. It was written in the German language, and merely complimental, giving him and his officers an invitation to Bolcheretsk.

Imagining, from the appearance of Mr. Port, that he might probably be the commander's secretary, he was considered in that light, and was invited, with the Russian merchant, to dine with Captain Clerke. Soon, however, they began to suspect, from the behaviour of the merchant, that Mr. Port was no more than a common servant; however, he continued upon a footing of equality with them, and they, in return, reaped the advantage of his abilities as a linguist.

Major Behm having, as far as he was capable, relieved our navigators' present distresses, was not unmindful of their future wants; he procured from Captain Clerke the particulars of what flour and cordage he should want, promising to send them from Okotsk, to wait their arrival. He also presented the captain with a written paper, enjoining every Russian subject to assist them to the utmost of his abilities.

It being the intention of Captain Clerke to keep in sight the coast of Kamtschatka, as much as the weather would allow, in order to ascertain its position, they con-

tinued to steer towards the N. N. E. with variable light winds, till June 18.

July the 8th, they found themselves close to an expanse of ice, which, from the mast-head, was discovered to consist of very large compact bodies, united towards the exterior edge, but, in the interior parts, some pieces were observed floating in vacant spaces of the water: it extended from W. S. W. to N. E. by N.

Captain Clerke now finding it impossible to advance further to the northward on the American coast, and deeming it equally improbable that such a prodigious quantity of ice should be dissolved by the few remaining weeks that would terminate the summer, considered it as the best step that could be taken to trace the sea over to the coast of Asia, and endeavour to find some opening that would admit him further north, or see what more could be done upon that coast, where they hoped to meet with better success.

After exerting their most strenuous endeavours to clear the loose ice, they were under the necessity of forcing a passage to the south, which they accomplished the next morning, though not without subjecting the ship to some very severe shocks. The Discovery was not so successful; for, about eleven o'clock, when she had almost got clear out, she became so entangled by several large pieces, that her progress was stopped, and she immediately dropped to leeward, and fell broadside foremost, on the edge of a considerable body of ice; and there being an open sea to windward, the surf occasioned her to strike with violence upon it. Upon the change of wind, the ice began to separate; and her people, setting all the sails, forced a passage through it.

Finding their farther progress to the north, as well as their nearer approach to either continent, obstructed by immense bodies of ice, they considered it as not only injurious to the service, by endangering the safety of the ships, but likewise fruitless with respect to the design of their voyage, to make any farther attempts for the discovery of a passage. Great was the joy that appeared on the countenance of every individual, as soon as Captain Clerke's resolutions were known. They were all completely weary of a navigation full of danger, and in which the greatest perseverance had not been rewarded with the smallest prospect of success. They therefore turned their faces towards home, after an absence of three years, with extreme delight and satisfaction.

Captain Clerke, whose health continued to decline ever since the ships lay in the harbour of St. Peter and St. Paul, being now no longer able to get out of his bed, signified his desire that the officers would receive their orders from Mr. King; and directed that they should repair, with all convenient speed, to the bay of Awatska. At nine o'clock in the morning, on the 22d of August, this gentleman expired, aged 38. His death was occasioned by a consumption, which had manifestly commenced before his departure from England, and of which he had lingered during the whole continuance of the voyage.

On the 25th, Captain Gore, in consequence of the death of Captain Clerke, made out the new commissions. He appointed himself to the command of the Resolution, and Mr. King to that of the Discovery. On the 29th, in the afternoon, they performed the last sad offices to Captain Clerke. The officers and crew of the two vessels attended him in procession

to the grave; the ships, at the same time, firing minute guns; and, at the conclusion of the service, three vollies were fired by the marines. The body was interred under a tree, which stands on a little eminence in the valley north of the harbour, where the store-houses and hospital are situated; this being, as Captain Gore supposed, such a situation as was most consonant to the wishes of the deceived. The priest of Paratounca also recommended this spot, imagining it would be very near the centre of the new church. This worthy pastor joined in the procession, walking with the gentleman who read the service. All the Russians in the garrison assembled on the occasion, and respectfully assisted in the solemnity.

All damages to the vessels being now repaired, they quitted this bay October the 9th.

Volcanoes are numerous in Kamtschatka; only three of which have lately been subject to eruptions. Springs of hot water are said to abound in this country. Fish is certainly the staple article of food among the inhabitants of this peninsula; who cannot possibly derive any considerable part of their sustenance either from agriculture or cattle. The soil, indeed, affords some wholesome roots, and every part of the country produces great quantities of berries; but these alone could not possibly support the inhabitants. In short, fish may here be called the staff of life, with more propriety than bread in any other country; for neither the inhabitants, nor their domestic animals of the canine species, could possibly exist without it.

The natives are below the common height, which is attributed to their marrying so very early; both sexes usually engage in the conjugal state at thirteen or four-

teen years of age. Their habitations consist of three distinct sorts; their jourts, balagans, and log-houses, which are here called isbas; they inhabit the first in the winter, and the second in the summer; the third are introduced by the Russians, wherein only the wealthier people reside. A jourt consists of a kind of oblong square, dug about six feet deep in the earth; the dimensions must be proportioned to the numbers who are to inhabit it, for it is usual for several to live together in the same jourt. Strong wooden posts, or pillars, are fastened in the ground, at equal distances from each other, on which the beams intended to support the roof are extended; which is formed by joists, one end of which rest upon the ground, and the other on the beams. Between the joists, the interstices are filled up with wicker work, and turf is spread over the whole.

A balagan consists of nine posts, fixed into the earth in three regular rows, at equal distances from each other, to the height of about twelve or thirteen feet from the surface. About ten feet from the ground, rafters are laid from post to post, and securely fastened by strong ropes. The joists are laid upon these rafters, and a turf covering completes the platform or floor of the balagan. A roof of a conical figure is raised upon this, by means of long poles, which are fastened to the rafters at one end, and meet together in a point at the top. The whole is covered, or rather thatched, with a coarse kind of grass.

The isbas, or log-houses, are composed of long timbers, piled horizontally, with the ends let into each other, and the seams are filled up or caulked with moss. Like those of our common cottages, the roof is sloping, and thatched either with grass or rushes. Each log-house

has three apartments in the inside. One end may be said to be a kind of entry, which extends the whole width and height of the house, and seems to be a kind of receptacle for their bulky articles, as sledges, harness, &c. This has a communication with their best apartment, which is in the middle, and is furnished with broad benches, calculated both for eating and sleeping upon. A door leads from this into the kitchen, almost half of which is taken up with an oven or fire-place; which is let into the wall that separates the middle apartment and the kitchen, and is so constructed as to communicate the heat to both rooms at the same time.

Having cleared the entrance of Awatska Bay on October the 9th, they had very blowing weather and adverse winds, which put them out of the course they intended. On the 26th they had the pleasure of descrying high land to the westward, which proved to be Japan. On the 29th they had a storm, and in the evening, the gale, without the smallest diminution of its violence, shifted to the west, and, by producing a sudden swell, in a direction contrary to that which had before prevailed, caused the ships to strain and labour extremely. During the continuance of the storm, the Resolution had several sails split. From this time to November the 5th they continued their course to the N. E. having very unsettled weather, attended with lightning and rain. During the last two days they passed considerable quantities of pumice-stone, some pieces of which were taken up, and found to weigh from an ounce to three pounds. They imagined that these stones had been thrown into the water by eruptions, at different times, as many of them were entirely bare, and others covered with barnacles.

On the 15th they saw three islands, and made sail for the southern point of the largest island. Its south point is an elevated barren hill, rather flat at the summit, and when seen from the west south-west, exhibits an evident volcanic crater. The sand, earth, or rock, displayed various colours; and they imagined that considerable part was sulphur, not only from its appearance to the eye, but from the strong sulphureous smell. It was therefore called Sulphur Island.

On the 30th they ran along the Lema Isles. About nine o'clock, a Chinese boat, which had before been with the Resolution, came alongside the Discovery, with offers of a pilot, which, however, Captain King declined, as it was incumbent on him to follow his consort. Soon after, the Resolution fired a gun, and displayed her colours as a signal for a pilot. On the repetition of the signal, there was an excellent race between four Chinese boats; and Captain Gore engaged with the person who arrived first to conduct the ship to the Typa, for the sum of thirty dollars, sending word at the same time to Captain King, that, as he could easily follow him with the Discovery, that expence might be saved to him. In a short time afterwards, a second pilot getting on board the Resolution, insisted on guiding the ship; and immediately laying hold of the wheel, began to order the sails to be trimmed. This gave rise to a violent altercation, which was at length compromised, by their agreeing to divide the money between them.

On January the 20th, 1780, they steered for Pulo Condou, of which they got sight at half-past twelve o'clock. Parties were sent to cut wood the next day, which was the chief object of coming hither. Having

procured a supply of buffaloes, and some fat hogs here, they weighed anchor on the 28th, and on the 5th of February approached the coast of Sumatra. The country, even to the edge of the water, is covered with wood; and the shores are so low that the land is overflowed by the sea, which washes the trunks of the trees.

On the 11th they steered for Princes Island, and anchored within half a mile of the shore the next day. They had begun to experience, from the time of their entering the straits of Banca, the pernicious effects of this noxious climate. Two of the Discovery's people became dangerously ill of malignant putrid fevers; which, however, were prevented from being communicated to others, by putting the patients apart from the rest of the crew, in the most airy births. Many were attacked with disagreeable coughs; several complained of violent pains in the head; and even the most healthy persons felt a sensation of suffocating heat, accompanied with an extreme languor, and a total loss of appetite.

At the time of their departure from Prince's Island, and during their whole passage from thence to the Cape of Good Hope, (April 11) the people of the Resolution were in a far more sickly condition than those of the Discovery. For, though many of the crew of the latter ship continued for some time to complain of the effects of the pestilential climate they had left, they all happily recovered. During their continuance at the Cape, they met with the most friendly treatment, not only from the governor, but also from the other principal persons of the place, as well Africans as Europeans.

On June the 12th they passed the Equator for the fourth time during this voyage. Having made a fruitless attempt to make the western coast of Ireland, they came to an anchor at Stromness, and on October the 4th arrived safe at the Nore, after an absence of 4 years, 2 months, and 24 days. During this long voyage the Discovery did not lose a man, and the Resolution lost only five men by sickness, three of whom were in an ill state of health at their departure from England. This voyage, distinguished by the variety and importance of its discoveries, was fatal to its principal conductors. Besides the loss of Captains Cook and Clerke, Captain King died of a broken constitution about four years after his return to England.

THE END.

Directions to the Binder for placing the Cuts.

VOL. I.

	Page
The Dolphin laid upon her beam ends in a squall	16
Reception of Commodore Byron at Cape Virgin Mary	28
Captain Wallis attacked by the Indians	205
The Tamar and Dolphin at anchor in Port Egmont	44
Crew of the Swallow attacked by the Indians	288
The Queen of Otaheite receiving presents from Capt. Wallis	204
Oberea, Queen of Otaheite, surrendering the Island to Capt. Wallis	191
View of the Town and Harbour of Macassar	360
Captain Carteret taking possession of English Cove	307

VOL. II.

Repairing of Captain Cook's Ship in Endeavour River	218
Inhabitants of Otaheite dancing to their native Music	358
The body of a Chief preserved after death at Otaheite	82
Portrait of Captain Cook	1
View of the Town of Fonchal, the Capital of the Island of Madeira	9
Ewharra-no-Eatua, or House of God in Huaheine	96
View of the Peak on Sandwich Island	207
Lieutenant Burney discovering the mangled remains of their Shipmates	321
Cascade Cove, in Dusky Bay, New Zealand	162
A Heppah, built on a perforated rock in New Zealand	130

VOL. III.

Captain Cook landing at Karakaooa, Owhyhee	303
View of the Town of St. Peter and St. Paul	340
A human Sacrifice in Otaheite	135
A Morai in Atooi	190
A Winter Habitation in Kamtschatka	347
Ratification of Peace among the Chieftains and high Priests in the Friendly Islands	116
Powlaho entertaining Captain Cook	101
Mr. Burney entertained by the Chiefs of Wateiho	44
Inhabitants of Nootka Sound preserving Fish	232
Death of Captain Cook	324

Lives

University of
Connecticut
Libraries

39153029242445